00083804

THE
ASIATIC SOCIETY OF BOMBAY
Town Hall, Bombay.

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 02 January, 2016

Boid

Reynolds

Schultz

AZORES,

OR

WESTERN ISLANDS.

83804

Capt. Boid's Journ.
of the Voyage
to
Western Islands

LONDON:

SCHULZE AND CO., 13, POLAND STREET.

1835

CHAPTER III.

Page

THE DEPARTMENT OF ANGRA, INCLUDING TERCEIRA, ST. GEORGE'S AND GRACIOSA.—THE ISLAND OF TERCEIRA 205

CHAPTER IV.

THE ISLAND OF ST. GEORGE. 241

CHAPTER V.

THE ISLAND OF GRACIOSA. 250

CHAPTER VI.

THE DEPARTMENT OF HORTA, INCLUDING FAYAL, PICO, CORVO, AND FLORES.—THE ISLAND OF FAYAL. . 255

CHAPTER VII.

THE ISLAND OF PICO 298

CHAPTER VIII.

THE ISLAND OF CORVO. 315

CHAPTER IX.

THE ISLAND OF FLORES. 319

CHAPTER X.

CONCLUSION. 325

APPENDIX 337

REMARKS

ON THE

WESTERN ISLANDS.

PART I.

W. f. 14

E3804

914.619

REMARKS

ON THE

ARCHIPELAGO OF ISLANDS,

IN THE ATLANTIC,

CALLED THE AZORES.

INTRODUCTION.

These islands lie in the midst of the Atlantic Ocean, occupying a line of 100 leagues from the W.N.W. to the E.S.E. between the latitudes of 36°.59′ and 39°.44′ north, and longitudes west of Greenwich 31°.7′ and 25°.10′.

By the Portuguese they are divided into three distinct groups, separated by considerable distances: the first of these groups, lying at the W.N.W. extremity of the Archipelago, includes Flores

and Corvo; the second, or central, Fayal, Pico, St. George, Graciosa and Terceira; and the third, at the E.S.E. extremity, the islands of St. Michael and St. Mary.

Inasmuch as they form part of the dominions of the kingdom of Portugal, as also from their being situated in greater propinquity to the continent of Europe than to that of America, they are considered as appertaining to, and constituting part of, the former. The merit of their discovery belongs to that active-minded Prince, Don Henrico, third son of King John I. of Portugal, under whose influence and encouragement modern commerce and navigation received one of their first impulses, and the most distant nations of the earth were consequently brought into closer communication.

The Madeiras, Cape Verdes, Canaries, and the coast of Africa as far as Cape Palmas, having been already explored by the *then* enterprizing and persevering mariners of Portugal, his active genius conceived the plan of exploring also the Atlantic to the westward of Portugal, whither a Flemish vessel commanded by Joseph Vanderberg of Bruges had been driven the year before by stress of weather and easterly winds, and the crew having

reported the seeing land, in the year 1431 Don Henrico dispatched the celebrated and enterprising Gonsalvo Velho Cabral to make researches in that direction—which expedition, however, was that year attended with no other success than the discovery of a group of rocks, since called the Formigas or Ants. But in a second voyage, on the 15th of the following August, he was fortunate enough to descry the first island; to which, in celebration of the day (the festivity of the assumption of the Holy Virgin), he gave the appellation of Santa Maria.

It is no where recorded in Portuguese history at what exact periods the latest known islands were discovered, although (notwithstanding their proximity to each other) it is certain they were not known until 1460.

They received the appellation of Azores from the Portuguese navigators who first frequented them; who observing, in immense numbers in the neighbourhood of all the islands, a large species of hawk, which the inhabitants called Açor or Milhafre, ever afterwards applied the distinctive epithet of Ilhos dos Açores (or the islands of hawks) to this Archipelago, which epithet, by the

usage of years, became at length the recognised, legitimate and geographical term.

It is asserted with much confidence by many Portuguese writers, that the first-discovered of the islands were taken possession of in the name and for the benefit of the Order of Christ. It might have been so, but in fact without interfering with the regal authority and possession, since the King was in general grand master of that Order and fraternity, founded by King Denis in the year 1260 to perpetuate the remembrance of the great victory of Ourika* gained in 1140 by Alphonso I, who expelled the Moors from Portugal and founded the Portuguese monarchy.

It has been reported by several historians and geographers that the Azores had been previously explored and visited by the Flemish. This, however, is stated without the slightest authority. The suggestion arose from the fact above men-

* The battle of Ourika may be considered the cradle of the Portuguese monarchy, and to that event the present arms of Portugal owe their origin—the five blue escutcheons, namely, are symbolic of the five Moorish princes that were killed on that occasion; and the seven castles, of the seven provinces that were wrested from Moorish possession.

tioned; namely, that they were first *seen* by a Flemish vessel, and also because they were frequented many years after the Portuguese explored them by the Flemish settlers who were sent out by the Duchess of Burgundy to colonize some of the islands. Some asserted it on the authority of a Flemish chart being found with the islands inserted, which chart was dated at the end of the 14th century, prior to the Portuguese discovery; but it is well known they were introduced on the chart subsequent to its original construction by the celebrated author Behaim, the great geographer of that period, and who was grandfather to Job Huerta, who was sent out by the Duchess of Burgundy to colonize the islands.

CHAPTER I.

GENERAL CHARACTER OF THE AZOREAN ISLANDS.

With respect to the climate of this Archipelago, nature appears to have been prodigal in bestowing on it all the advantages that a fine atmosphere and a pure air can impart either to the animal or the vegetable world. The temperature is most delicious, and there is a spring-like softness in the air throughout the year, with no greater variation than 25 degrees of Farenheit's thermometer, whose average range from January to December is between 50° and 75°. The vicinity of the sea, united to the mountainous elevation of the general surface of the land, and incessant absorption of humidity which the volcanic nature of the soil induces, tends to temper and mollify the extreme ardor of the sun in this isolated spot of the ocean. From the indication of the thermometer it will be seen that extremes are never

felt: that cold can never be considerable even in winter, or the heats of summer intense. The general mildness of temperature is indeed so marked and peculiar, that no provision is requisite for the poor against inclemencies of winter; and the facility of procuring the means of sustenance is so great, that, in combination with this peculiar mildness and the nature of the government, a constitutional aversion is almost engendered to those efforts necessary for the improvement of cultivation. Nothing can be more enchanting or lovely than the spring: vegetation shoots forth with a rapidity and vigor that is quite astonishing, whilst there is a fresh verdure in the herbage, and a brilliance, beauty and fragrance in the flowers, eminently ornamental to the different gardens and parts of the country where they abound.

The climate can scarcely be said to be regular; and, from long observation of the inhabitants, it is found that no decidedly settled weather can be calculated on except between the summer solstice and the autumnal equinox. Showers of rain are frequent throughout the year, and in the winter so violent as to cause constant changes in the face of the country, washing away enormous masses of pumice from the mountains, throwing down

projecting excrescences composed of soft volcanic materials, and leaving the surface of the rocks and heights in many places quite destitute of soil. But scarce a day is known to pass without the sun making his appearance and the clouds partially clearing off. The decidedly fine days may be estimated at about two hundred, and the wet ones at about sixty.

The islands are in general extremely healthy, as is strongly evinced by the fine, hardy, robust character of the inhabitants, and the longevity peculiar to them: there is, however, a wide difference in point of situation throughout the islands; for instance, the N.E. sides are invariably found to be most salubrious, and the S.W. least so, which circumstance may be accounted for by the most prevailing winds being from the S.W., which are the strongest, and bring with them considerable humidity.

The Azores are peculiarly remarkable for the incessant gusts and gales to which they are subject throughout the year; and on this account, joined to their being destitute of any port that can offer a safe retreat and shelter to vessels, they have hitherto been rather held in dread and avoided by mariners. This peculiarity I have no doubt may

be philosophically accounted for from the volcanic formation of the whole Archipelago, which exhibits frequent proofs of a continued state of subterranean activity, and consequently causes, by the emission of heats, those frequent inequalities and sudden changes of the surrounding atmosphere which are, specifically speaking, produced by the cool dense air rushing in to supply the more rarefied mediums so frequently engendered in various parts of the islands. One of the greatest disadvantages attending the climate of these islands, is the constant state of humidity that prevails, owing to the process incessantly going on of evaporation and absorption. This is, however, generally speaking, attended with no other evil than the destruction of clothing, furniture, and all metallic substances liable to oxidation, unless preserved by the most unremitting vigilance and attention.

With respect to the natural history of the Archipelago nothing can be more interesting than it is in all its branches — more particularly that which relates to its geological characteristics, which I will first notice.

The whole range, it is evident, is of comparatively recent submarine volcanic formation; symp-

toms of which are manifested to the geologist almost at every step, by the actual condition of the surface, which bears constant marks of being formed by the violent and terrific agency of fire. By these tremendous means, in fact, all the islands have been, at various unknown periods, forced up from the sea.

From this general rule, however, may be excepted that of Santa Maria—which, although it has, like the rest of the Azores, been forced above the level of the sea by volcanic action, no where bears traces of the effect of fire on its surface, as will be further noticed in its particular description.

The effects of these awfully sublime movements of nature give rise to appearances, on the face of a country, of the most peculiar kind; and nothing can be more particularly interesting than the characteristics of these islands. Their general aspect is picturesque and bold, with features prominent and strongly marked. They, for the most part, present an irregular succession of isolated conical or accuminated hills, with table lands rising from two to five thousand feet in height; the former separated by valleys, the latter stratified and intersected with tremendous ravines and deep chasms

formed by the operation of rain over the soft volcanic materials composing the mountains; the whole is almost invariably bounded by magnificent mural precipices rising abruptly from the sea, and frequently rendered inaccessible by soft crumbling lava and masses of loose tuff of which they are formed. By observation, combined with the able assistance of an intelligent Portuguese gentleman, (Colonel Moshino de Albuquerque, who has devoted much research to this subject) I have been enabled to ascertain their principal characteristics, which I proceed to specify.

Notwithstanding the apparently recent formation of the islands, there has not yet been discovered amongst the component parts of any of them, a general order of superposition and stratification sufficiently marked and regular to enable the geologist to fix with any degree of probability the epocha when the various parts now composing them have risen from the ocean. The successions of stratification are indeed so irregular that the characteristics indicated in one place are almost diametrically opposed and entirely contradicted by the phenomena exhibited in another.

The precipitous mural character, however, of the rocks so generally surrounding the islands,

affords every facility for observing the relative positions and character of the materials that compose them ; and it may be commonly remarked that the internal strata of these declivities, as well as those of the ravines in the interior, are formed of a compact massive basalt, containing crystals of hornblende and olivine encrusted with a sort of hard friable granular paste quite feldspathic, and which by respiration gives out the argillaceous odour. Of this description are almost all those rugged declivities on the N.E. coast of St. Michael's, on the north side of the island of Terceira, as well as the western declivity of the little peninsula of Mount Brazil and the site of the castle of St. John Battiste.

This basalt also most commonly composes the little rocks and islets which are frequent round all the coasts, and have evidently been formed by the erosion and total ruin of the less consistent materials which once united them to the main.

These basalts very rarely assume the regular prismatic form—with a few exceptions however, when they are found to present very short though regular prisms, such as at Ponte da Ajuda on the North side of St. Michael's, (near which spot the Count Villa Flor, with his little band of constitutionalists,

landed in 1831,) where they form an interesting small columnar parapet. The island of St. George likewise affords an instance : a little to the westward of the port of Velas, where the basalt assumes the form of an arch, and, situated as it is in front of a picturesque creek or basin, presents a beautifully interesting object for the pencil of the draughtsman. None of these masses appear to be anywhere united with those materials composing the surrounding strata, either porous or leucitic lavas, or conglomerates; from whence it may reasonably be concluded, that, of all that portion of the Azores which exists above the level of the ocean, the basalts may be referred to an epoch considerably anterior to the rest.

All the other geological component productions that superpose the above-mentioned basalts are so irregularly distributed, that conglomerates are frequently found overlaying them, formed exclusively of volcanic substances containing large fragments of basalt, leucitic lava, pumice and obsidian. Sometimes the grain is large, forming a pudding stone; sometimes extremely fine, the fragments more tender and homogenous, and their paste sufficiently ductile to form a substance applicable to the purposes of pottery.

These conglomerates are found in various situations, from the level of the sea to the highest mountains; which serves to prove that the summits of these heights were, at the time of their formation, beneath the level of the sea. Entire hills of scoriæ and pumice, mixed with streams of obsidian, are often found placed over these conglomerates; such, for instance, as the peak of Bagacina in the island of Terceira, and all the mountains between the beautiful valley of Fournas and the sea at the island of St. Michael's, where the pumice exists in such quantities that a most profitable trade might be formed, if encouraged by enterprise and industry.

In the above masses of scoriæ and pumice are frequently found large logs of wood and well-preserved trunks of trees, very little changed in character. These are generally referred to the operations of the Deluge, but are in reality the produce of very modern action—of phenomena peculiar, yet still common in various parts of the Azores—namely land-slips, or the precipitation of entire overhanging mountainous masses from their elevated position to the level beneath, carrying with them, of course, general destruction; burying houses, trees, cattle, and human beings in their fall. These

landslips (of which there have occurred some remarkable examples at the back of the Isle of Wight, adding greatly to the beauty of that romantic region) appear to be caused by a combination of circumstances, but principally by the operation of sulphuric vapours on the soft scoriæ and pumice whereof they are composed ; or the flow of torrent streams, which by constant erosion undermine and totally destroy the basement whereon they repose.

The surface of almost every one of the islands abounds in the most curious forms and characters, effected by the agency of fire during various eruptions : each object, indeed, bears the stamp of fire, and huge fragments of lava are strewed in every direction—rendering it often difficult to account for their solitary position. They are all more or less remarkable for their number of strange-looking romantic caverns, which frequently extend 500 or 600 feet in length, are proportionably high, have occasionally a fountain of limpid water at the end, and have evidently been formed by the flow of lava over light masses of friable soft scoriæ, which at subsequent periods have gradually settled down, and left a vaulted space above—or have been washed away by the

influx of waters, leaving the structure of lava that superposed them. Hence have resulted these singular caverns, not unfrequently ornamented with stalactatic formations.

The conic pyramidal hills that everywhere present themselves, are, in many respects, craters of extinct volcanoes—the interiors of which are from 50 to 2000 feet in depth, beautifully clothed with verdant heaths and shrubs, and furnishing some of the most interesting and picturesque scenes which, of similar character, these islands, or any other country can boast. The gullies, the chasms and long deep ravines that have been formed by the erosion of torrents caused by the rains washing from the mountains to the sea, are, by the bounteous efforts of nature during the revolution of many centuries, now covered with luxuriant wood and rich verdant shrubs, constituting sheltered retired spots that are frequently chosen as the most fertile and favoured abodes of the islands.

The Azores, as will be easily imagined from the foregoing geological description, abound with a great variety of mineral waters of the most valuable qualities and temperature, and which alone might be rendered a source of wealth to the inhabitants,

if the condition of the country and the accommodations of life were such as to induce visitors to resort thither to profit by their beneficial effects. Amongst the most valuable, curious and extensive, are those of the Val das Fournas, and Ribiere Grande in the island of St. Michael's; those of Euxofra, near Angra in the island of Terceira; and at Pico and Flores. The maximum heat of these springs is about five degrees beyond boiling point, which serves to prove the permanent activity of the subterranean fires. They are rationally supposed also either to prevent earthquakes, that otherwise would occur, or to diminish their destructive power by the heated vapours incessantly thrown off to an incalculable extent from these numerous vents.

The volcanic movements that have occurred in this Archipelago since its discovery, are both important and numerous, and will be attended to in the descriptions of the respective islands. It may be remarked here, however, that the first and latest eruptions have been at the island of St. Michael's: namely, that of 1445, which formed the lake of the seven cities, and that of 1811, which threw up the island of Sabrina, that has since disappeared.

To the philosophical spectator, these islands

furnish in their volcanic phenomena a superabundant source of contemplation, calculated to inspire at once terror, admiration and reverence. The horrible scenes of past devastation ; extensive plains of lava that have been vomited from the bowels of the earth in fiery torrents; and the dark, gloomy-looking, rugged masses of matter that have been ejected in ages gone by, and now constitute through the operation of time enormous indurated rocky mountains—tend to awaken in man a sense of his own littleness, and to force him, in spite of himself, silently to acknowledge and at the same time adore the hand of that stupendous and incomprehensible Power that formed them.

Earthquakes, although frequent in the Azores, are not of that frightfully destructive character peculiar to those of South America and other places. With the exception of the calamitous catastrophes of 1531 and 1755, nothing of importance is recorded ; and at some of the islands—namely, Corvo and Flores, the phenomenon is unknown. Those most subject to them, and still experiencing their effects in a partial degree, are Terceira, St. George, and Fayal, where long droughts followed by extremely heavy rains are invariably the preceding symptoms.

I believe it is generally acknowledged that no soil is capable of greater fertility and productiveness than that of a volcanic country; but this must always bear proportion to the decomposition of the lavas that have been scattered, and necessarily constitute the surface upon which the seeds of vegetation are to be deposited. In the Azores the fact is strongly verified; for no country in the world can boast a more luxuriant soil. The circumstances of their climate, favourable position, and insular state, exposed as they are to the powerful operation of an unceasing vaporous atmosphere, have induced a more rapid state of decomposition than is experienced elsewhere. Consequently, the fertility and the advantages thereby offered to the hand of industry are quite beyond expression, and calculated for fulfilling all the purposes of life whether useful or ornamental. And this extraordinary productiveness, united to the irregular, grotesque and sublime forms peculiar to a volcanic country, gives to the general aspect of these islands a picturesque and lavish beauty, rarely to be met with in any other part of the globe. The soil may be said to be in general composed of volcanic ashes, pumice, slags of all sorts, decomposed lava, a quantity of ferruginous

matter, a very small portion of argil and sand, and a little calcaire ; all, however, mingled with a large quantity of vegetable matter, which goes on accumulating with the revolution of ages, in proportion as the process of decomposition proceeds.

Even in the present neglected uncultivated condition of these islands ; in their uncivilized state; and with the little that man has done in aid of the advantages which the hand of Providence has lavished in so extraordinary a degree,—it is impossible for the ordinary traveller who will undertake to explore them, not to feel animated with sensations of the utmost delight ; while the man accustomed to philosophical contemplation and enquiry, must feel his spirit raised into adoration of the Great Author of events when he sees united in this corner of the earth, all those monuments at once attesting the illimitable power and benificence of the Creator. All those interesting objects that nature loves to blend in her enchanting compositions may be found in this wonderful Archipelago ; all those scenes of romantic and picturesque beauty ; all in fact that is wild, fearful, extraordinary and sublime, combined with the soothing and the lovely. Splendid prospects of the vast ocean,

through vistas of tropical verdure and luxuriant vegetation, or combined with majestic mountainous masses and horrid precipices bordering the shore; hills of every form, enriched by nature with the indigenous productions of the soil, or clothed by the toil of man; valleys of the most fertile and lively character, frequently enshrined within a circuitous chain of mural mountains that seem to shut them out for ever from the rest of the world; these, united to the interesting objects exhibited in the effects of volcanic eruptions, and the extraordinary combination of vegetable productions peculiar to every quarter of the globe, (which here appear to flourish without care in all parts,) render this isolated group of islands one of the most fascinating portions of the earth. Were they embellished by the arts and refinements of civilized life; were agriculture under the influence of industry, and horticulture, useful and ornamental, under that of taste, they would become a species of terrestrial paradise calculated to render man almost too happy for this sublunary sphere.

But alas! all is rude and uncultivated, and society is in a state of semi-barbarism—without education, industry, intelligence, or taste; while

the mind of the reflective observer is left to wonder at and lament the listlessness, apathy and inaction of man under an accumulation of natural advantages and blessings which, a rational mind would imagine, must inevitably stimulate their possessors, almost under any circumstances, to the exercise of energy and activity.

CHAPTER II.

AGRICULTURE, ZOOLOGY, ETC.

With respect to the state of agriculture—that fruitful source of a nation's wealth and prosperity—nothing can be more primeval or neglected than it is throughout the whole of the Azores. This fact may be imputed to a combination of causes: amongst them, I shall enumerate the following as the most leading and influential.

In the first place, the miserable, arbitrary government policy of both church and state that has hitherto paralyzed the elements of industry wherever its baneful effects have been felt: for whilst church policy has, through priestcraft and loading men's consciences with superfluous weight, kept

the people in a state of moral debasement, checking the growth of intelligence, and practising its greedy exactions on individual property—that of the state has established a kind of physical degradation by the following means;—namely, a military despotism, and a code of laws which, instead of securing the person and property of the subject, and encouraging both industry and talent, has tended to expose the one and restrain the other. Hence has resulted, on the part of the people, a state of apathy, indolence and recklessness characteristic of every oppressed and misgoverned race.

In the second place, the ruinous operation of the laws of primogeniture, particularly as three-fourths of all the cultivated lands of the islands are entailed; which laws, so long as they exist, must place insuperable obstacles in the way of civilization and prosperity. The owners of these large estates can in no country undertake to farm and cultivate such extensive properties themselves, and much less here, where both capital and enterprize are wanting. They have, therefore, recourse to leasing it out in small grants to ignorant farmers on whom they exercise the most grinding tyranny

and exaction ; and such is the impolitic system of short leases, that the poor farmer is discouraged from doing that benefit to the ground he otherwise might : indeed, to make the most of a bad bargain, he drains all the virtues out of the soil, and yields it to his master, at the termination of his lease, in almost a sterile condition. The great proprietors of these entailed estates are called Morgados, which title is appended to the name of the person as that of Esquire to an Englishman's. Many of them are in the annual receipt of as much as 40,000 crowns from their lands, and reside in Portugal, whither their rents are transmitted in the form of produce.

Another calamitous effect produced by these laws of primogeniture is, that they prevent the settling of enterprising foreigners, who would otherwise—to avail themselves of the advantages of climate and situation, or for commercial purposes —purchase land, take up their abode, and, by the introduction of capital and industry, bring likewise genius, competition, and a rapid ameloiration of society. But if land is not to be purchased, foreigners are little likely to establish themselves there, and expend money, labor, and taste on

domains or buildings, which, necessarily going from them in a few years, their children can never enjoy.

In the third place, must be noticed the total absence of practicable roads for communication with the interior, and by which the produce of the country might be transported at a cheap rate to any general mart: the result of this is, that the central parts of these fertile islands, amounting to full two-thirds of the whole superficies, are unconverted to any profitable purpose, and lie deserted in a state of uncultivated waste, or are impenetrably covered with underwood briers, wild shrubs, stunted cedars, etc. leaving nothing but a mere belt of land, bordering on the sea, that is either peopled or brought under culture.

The condition of these islands, when first discovered, was that they were entirely covered with forest and underwood, all of which was burned down or otherwise cleared away by the Portuguese settlers, for the cultivation of the sugar cane, which was imported from Candia and Cyprus, and at that period warmly encouraged by the government of the mother country. When, however, the sugar trade subsequently became established by the newly discovered Indian possessions and

the Brazils, the demand from the islands declined; and, in consequence, the cultivation of grain of all sorts, of oranges, lemons, etc. was substituted— and, to a great extent, that of the vine, which for the first time was introduced from Portugal and Madeira, and has since proved an extensive and profitable source of commerce. The fertility and amenity of the hills and valleys adjacent to the sea enable the peasantry to reap their productions with comparatively little trouble. The rocky parts of the hills, which are generally composed of lava, are covered with vineyards; whilst the rich loomy plains below are devoted to the cultivation of grain, pulse, and vegetables.

Rural economy is, as may be imagined, a dead letter in this country. On account of thedeep ignorance of the people, the *practice* of agriculture is but little, and the *science* less known, throughout the islands. The rude system of their forefathers is still pursued, and their implements and utensils would be disgraceful to savages in the wilds of Africa. They merely turn over the soil, throw in the seed at random, and so bountiful is nature, that a very short interval produces abundant returns. Such, in fact, is the capability of the soil, that were every advantage taken, these islands

might furnish an ample supply of grain for the support of five or six millions of inhabitants, instead of 200,000; even now, they occasionally supply the markets of Lisbon, Oporto, and Madeira, with wheat, barley, and pulse of all sorts.

If, perchance, it is deemed indispensable to give additional stimulus to the soil, they sow a crop of lupins, (which at these islands grow luxuriantly, and to an extraordinary size) and, when about three feet high, they plough it all into the soil, which, from the peculiarly fertilising properties of this plant, receives a richness, that soon renders it ready for the succeeding crop of grain. The lupin is a valuable herb in the Azores, and is every where cultivated to a great extent. The seeds, after being well soaked in salt or sea water, (to divest them of their bitterness) constitute a favorite and most nutritious food for the lower orders; and the plant furnishes an excellent green meat for cattle; although, from its inebriating qualities, it should only be given in small quantities at a time.

Graciosa, St. Michael, and Fayal may be considered, on account of the general superiority of soil, as the most flourishing in point of agriculture; and Pico, Terceira, and Santa Maria least so.

Settlers and commercial visitors have, from time

to time, introduced plants, herbs, and trees of various kinds to such an extent, from all parts of the world, that the Azores already produce all the classes peculiar to northern, as well as many from tropical and equatorial countries ; and so favorable is the character of the climate, I feel convinced that, with care, scientific cultivation, and a judicious choice of suitable localities, the productions of almost every part of the globe might be brought to perfection here. All those herbs and plants celebrated for their medicinal qualities, essences, odors, and dyes, are to be found in abundance ; and might, under the influence of commercial activity, furnish an immense source of wealth. Excellent coffee and tobacco grow luxuriantly, although now only cultivated for private consumption by a few individuals ; all the commonest, as well as most delicate culinary vegetables known are likewise included ; white hemp and flax are both of fine growth, and furnish wherewithal to supply the poor with sufficient for their consumption of the manufactured produce.

All the tuberose plants grow in these islands with great facility, and many are cultivated to a considerable extent, particularly the common and

sweet potatoe, and the yam. The myrtle grows indigenously, and in large quantities—indeed is so common, that the juice expressed from its branches is commonly made use of by the peasants for tanning their own leather.

The fruits of the Azores might, by care and attention, be rendered, on account of the advantages of climate, even superior to those of any other country; but in order for fruits to be brought to perfection, the exercise of delicate skill and horticultural science is generally requisite; and these being totally unknown here, many of the fruit trees (of which every species may be seen) either bear no fruit at all, or of a nature ungrateful to the palate; for instance, the peach, apricot, olive and others. The luscious banana, however, grows here luxuriantly; and is not only a great acquisition as a fruit, but also gives an extra charm to the face of the country from its beautiful and picturesque foliage, which fills up many a landscape with gracefulness, that to be duly appreciated should be seen, not described.

With respect to ornamental horticulture; general absence of all taste or skill—nay, even of inclination to acquire them—is so great, that it is totally neglected, excepting amongst a few foreign settlers

English and American, who here and there display that refined *goût* which superior education always imparts; and at the same time they have furnished a proof of the perfection to which the productions of the vegetable world may be brought in this lovely climate. We might particularise the quinta of the American Consul of Fayal, whose house (built by himself) stands on an interesting eminence, looking towards the sea in front of the picturesque mountain of Pico; and at one coup-d'œil exhibits in the surrounding garden the most striking and magnificent combination of beautiful shrubs and flowers peculiar to all climates and countries that can be imagined. With all the rare productions that now constitute the pride of our European gardens may be seen tastefully mingled the ornamental trees and plants of the tropics; namely, all the various tribes of palms, the numerous species of cactus, the dragon's blood, aloe, judas tree, etc. which, blended with the fig tree, our own admired weeping willow, the orange, lemon, and vine, produce an effect perfectly enchanting; nay, even the beauty of our own native flowers is here improved! The hydrangia, geranium and oleander are of enormous growth; the fuchsia assumes quite an arborescent form;

and the camelia japonica rises up with the height and strength of a forest tree.

With respect to the zoological productions of the Azores, the following observations are the result of particular research and enquiry. In the first place, they are without exception free from venomous animals of any sort, which will enhance their value as a place of residence considerably in the eyes of Europeans. Horses are rare in all the islands, very small, and generally speaking of very inferior quality. Asses abound to a prodigious extent; and are, with bullocks, the usual beasts employed for all purposes of labor. Cattle are generally in great number, but are of the finest and best quality at St. George's and St. Michael's. Sheep also are every where numerous, though bred only for the benefit of the wool, which is manufactured into a coarse species of cloth for the consumption of the islands, the inhabitants scarcely ever eating the meat. Goats exist in myriads wherever a blade of grass can be found for their support; and pigs and dogs, as in the mother country, swarm to an excess, and are seen lying about the streets of towns and villages to the great interruption of pedestrians.

Of birds, the domestic species resemble those of

Europe, though geese and turkeys are the most rare. Amongst the wild ones are several of the hawk tribe; an immense abundance of pigeons; the red-legged partridge, snipes, woodcocks, quails, and many others common to Portugal, besides a great variety of singing birds—which the islanders seem to leave in undisturbed possession of their resorts, for the numbers are incredible, and the harmony of their mingled notes produces a most enchanting effect early in the morning or late in the evening. Amongst them may be particularly remarked the blackbird, thrush, real canary, native canary (which is of a yellow brown colour) and two others called in Portuguese toto-negro and avenigreira—which possess a beautiful note, particularly the former, and are held in great estimation amongst the inhabitants.

The pescatory tribes peculiar to the Archipelago, are extraordinary in abundance and of variety almost unequalled. The adjacent seas abound with the spermaceti whale and other oleaginous species, such as the tunny and bonito; while the coasts of each island produce prodigious quantities of all sorts, both calculated to supply the demands of the poor and to gratify the delicate palates of the rich.

In the insect tribe the most profitable are the bee, the silk-worm and the cochineal; the honey of the former, however, is of inferior quality, as is supposed, on account of the facility with which these little animals procure food from the abundant flowers throughout the year; but the two latter, if under the influence of industry, would prove an immense source of riches to the islands. The most obnoxious insects are flies, gnats, bugs, and fleas, which during the warm season infest houses in a most extraordinary degree,—the two last arising from the habitual filth and neglect of the inhabitants.

CHAPTER III.

TRADE AND COMMERCE.

TOGETHER with a few cattle, the agricultural productions of the Azores constitute the principal source of their little trade, and consist of oranges and lemons, grain of all sorts, and wine. These are taken away by the vessels of different nations, pretty nearly in the following annual proportions :

To England 126,000 cases of oranges; about 2,000 pipes of wine and brandy; besides a proportion of urzella, etc. for which she sends in return, woollen cloths, hard ware, wearing apparel of all sorts, stationery, etc.

To the Brazils about 5,000 pipes of wine and one thousand of brandy; about 12,000 yards of coarse linen; pulse of all sorts; and other small articles: taking in exchange rum, coffee, sugar, cotton and timber.

To Hamburgh and Russia 14,000 cases of oranges and lemons, 6,000 pipes of wine and brandy; for which are received pitch, iron, glass, and cordage.

To the United States 4,000 pipes of wine, 200 of brandy and 12,000 cases of oranges and lemons; for which are received staves, fish, oil, linseed, tar and timber.

To Portugal a large quantity of grain, and pulse (independent of what is sent to pay rents to the non-resident morgados); salt pork and beef; coarse linen, and cheese: which is paid for in salt, lime, tea, *images*, *crucifixes*, *indulgences*, *dispensations* and *relics*; the last five articles being publicly sold in the shops at most extortionate prices.

In the above trade, from 700 to 900 vessels are annually employed; all of which are necessarily of very small tonnage, on account of the total absence of any thing like a sheltered port or safe harbour. Such are the inconveniences of anchorage, that all vessels are obliged to weigh and stand out immediately the wind sets on the land, frequently having but half their cargo, which if composed of perishable goods, such as fruit, is oftener than not destroyed before the vessel can

return. The Portuguese boast of the islands possessing six ports—namely Horta in the island of Fayal, Vellas in St. George, Angra and Praya in Terceira, and Ponte Delgada and Villa França in St. Michael's: but they are all open roadsteads, subject to the dangers and inconveniences just mentioned, with the exception of Horta and Villa França—the first of which is sheltered by the adjacent islands of Pico and St. George, and the latter by a volcanic island called the Ilheo; both capable of being, (by aid of money and skill,) rendered magnificent ports for the security and convenience of any vessels; and if effected, this would, alone, attach to these islands incalculable commercial advantages, (consequently an increased revenue to the mother country,) and at the same time an importance in history, they have not hitherto enjoyed. It is scarcely possible to calculate the extent of those beneficial results that might accrue from such a circumstance both to the islands and to Portugal, were a suitably liberal policy adopted by the government, and if that government would avail itself of the brilliant opportunity which the possession of such colonies offers, giving to them the encouragement and support essential for the welfare of every rising state.

The present condition of commerce, however, as compared with the extensive means nature has given these islands, is, as may be seen by the foregoing statements, very circumscribed; indeed, on account of the miserably oppressive policy of the governors, it has even considerably diminished during the last fifteen or twenty years.

CHAPTER IV.

MODE OF GOVERNMENT AND EXTENT OF POPULATION.

With respect to the government of the Azores, it has hitherto been so impolitic, so atrocious, so replete indeed with all the lamentable abuses of despotism, that it may be justly deemed the canker worm which has incessantly diminished the country's vitality and effectually checked its prosperous growth.

Like the other colonies of Portugal, these islands have been governed by a military delegate bearing the title of Captain General of the Azores, who, although his services might be continued, commonly received an appointment for only three years, which circumstance led to the rapacity and robbery invariably characterizing these functionaries. The power and prerogatives enjoyed by the Captain General were considerably greater and

less controlled than those even of the King. He possessed supreme power over all municipal governors and judicial authorities; over every department of finance, agriculture, commerce and navigation: besides which, being commander in chief of the army, he derived thence an additional weight and influence that negatived any resistance to his measures, however despotic. There were two subordinate governors, also, appointed by the King to the departments of Ponte Delgada and Horta; besides which, military commandants or governors were nominated by the Captain General to each of the other islands. These latter have, generally speaking, been ignorant, uneducated men, who sought no further advantage from their situation than the gratification of all their evil propensities and passions, which they would enforce even at the point of the bayonet. The conduct of these wretches, indeed, was so abhorrent, that feelings of disgust induce us to draw a veil over its details. The temptations wherewith the consciousness of possessing despotic power is naturally connected in frail human beings; temptations to the indulgence of evil passions and the oppression of those beneath, were never exhibited more

conspicuously, nor ever perhaps yielded to with less effort at resistance.

This calamitous state of the government has, however, been considerably ameliorated, in consequence of the revolutionary changes of the last few years; and now I trust a thorough regeneration is about to take place under the salutary influence of the charter, the author of which has already commenced the labors of reform, in all the various departments. I will not therefore enter into further details on the subject of the principal laws and regulations, knowing that a short period will cause an entire alteration in their frame-work.

Nothing indeed can be more favorable for the amelioration of the Azores, than the recent adversity of the legitimate government of Portugal. It has, by causing its principal members to seek an asylum here during their misfortunes, impressed upon them the importance of such a possession: it has brought to view the neglected condition of the islands, with the miserable policy that has hitherto been exercised in them; and I feel convinced that the auspicious arrival of Don Pedro will be hereafter hailed as an event diffusing the first dawning beams of li-

ty, civilization, and prosperity around these res.

The political division of the Archipelago, is into three departments: namely, 1st. that of Ponte Delgada, called the oriental, which is composed of Santa Maria and St. Michael; —2nd. that of Angra, including Terceira, St. George and Graciosa, called the meridional ;—and 3rd. that of Horta, which comprises Fayal, Pico, Flores, and Corvo, and is called the occidental.

The seat of government military, civil, and ecclesiastical is established at Terceira, on account of the natural safety and strength of that island, and the great facility with which it may be defended against a superior attacking force.

The population of the nine islands composing this Archipelago is found by a recent census to comprise about 250,000 souls ; — a number not amounting to one-sixth of what they are enabled to maintain, if we consider the immense tracts of fertile land, that lie deserted and uncultivated; a circumstance easily to be accounted for by the oppressive tyranny, and grasping propensities, of the governors and ecclesiastics; by the ruinous effects of a corrupt magistracy; and the overbearing conduct of a

haughty aristocracy; producing altogether a state of things fully as unfortunate as the desolating feudal barbarism of the dark ages of Europe, and operating as the cause of those various emigrations (principally to the Brazils) which have from time to time so considerably diminished the population.

The principal places in the Azores with respect to the number of inhabitants, are, First: the three capital cities, from whence are derived the respective names of the departments: namely, Angra, in the Island of Terceira; Ponte Delgada in St. Michael's; and Horta in the island of Fayal. —Secondly, the towns named underneath: Ribeiragrande, Vellas, Villa Franca, Santa Cruz in Flores, Magdelena, Calheta, Praya in Graciosa, Nordeste, Santo Roque, Lages in Flores, Porto, and San Sebastião: and Thirdly: eighty-four villages—the most important among them being Rabodepeixe, Maya, Mosteiros, Santa Barbara, Villa Nova, Norte Grande, Cedros and Portepiedade: besides nearly seventy small hamlets dispersed amongst the more retired and solitary parts of the different islands.

Population can only increase and flourish in proportion to the security of property and person.

Mankind will not willingly select that place for an abode where the latter is in constant danger, either from defective laws, or the tyranny of rulers; nor will the labourer, the artisan, or the man of talent devote time, physical energies, genius, and intelligence in amassing wealth, which they feel conscious may be wrested from them at any moment at the point of the despot's bayonet or by the knife of the bandit. Hence arises the inertness of the poor working classes, the natives of such places, who limit their exertions simply to the living from hand to mouth; as also the inactivity of the man of talent, who either suffers his genius to sleep, or emigrates to some more happy shore, where he may securely reap the fruits of his application. The annals of history prove to us that in every country in the world, population and industry have kept pace with the justice and freedom of public laws and institutions; and that the most prosperous period, as regards the former, has always been simultaneous with the flourishing era of the latter.

CHAPTER V.

NATIONAL CHARACTER, CUSTOMS, RELIGION, ARCHITECTURE, ETC.

THE character of the inhabitants of these islands possesses, with all its defects, advantageous traits which, under the direction of a free and provident government, might be converted to any thing morally ornamental, or practically useful. Notwithstanding the iron sway to which the country has been so long subject, they are considerably more independent than their brethren of the mother country. They are mild in disposition, and of quick perceptions; but in every class so deplorably ignorant, and in such a state of mental abasement, that their existence is not many degrees elevated above that of unreasonable animals.—They speak the Portuguese language, with occasional varieties of dialect incidental to the several islands; but have a peculiar sing-song

mode of talking exceedingly disagreeable to the ear. In a physical point of view, they are very superior to the natives of Portugal: the women are much fairer, or more correctly speaking, less yellow—with black eyes and hair, but with large feet and no pre-eminence for beauty. They are celebrated however for fecundity—it being no uncommon case for a woman to have twelve, fourteen, or fifteen children. They are described by some Portuguese travellers as particularly graceful, and generally possessing a dignified deportment. I regret I cannot join in such eulogies; unless the stalking along in a most erect posture, with the head enshrined in the folds of a capuche, constitute, joined to a ghost-like appearance and funereal gait, the qualities of dignity and grace. The men are generally speaking of good proportion, strong, and well made, with an agreeable expression of countenance, somewhat similar to that of their Moorish progenitors. The lower orders and peasantry are a very superior class of society to their equals in Portugal; they are apt, inoffensive, mild, and civil; and when induced to work are extremely laborious. They are not treacherous and vindictive, like their continental brethren: though like them, when driven to

desperation, they make use of the knife. They are much addicted to petty larceny, in which they appear to consider themselves privileged, and consequently rival their competitors the Lazzaroni of Naples in its habitual practice, as well as in the rapidity of their movements. As a natural result of extreme ignorance, they are superstitious and bigoted to the last degree, and most humiliatingly subject to the priesthood and their crafts. They are passionately fond of music; but neither skilful nor pleasing, either in instrumental or vocal performance. The viola is their usual instrument, which they accompany with rude extemporaneous effusions. The island dance, of which they seem very fond, is called the landoon—the air and movements of which resemble the Spanish bolero. This dance is recently introduced into the higher circles of life, and made the concluding one of the evening.

They are intolerably dirty; full of vermin, and, in consequence, subject to cutaneous eruptions, particularly itch; their dress is rude, and that of each island peculiar to itself, as will be noticed when each is described.

They are fond of gambling, and of all pleasurable occupations; as also of processions, whether

clerical or military—particularly of the former, with its gaudy pageantry and exhibitions. There is a custom amongst them apparently quite peculiar to these islands. In every parish they annually, at the festival of the Holy Ghost, elect a chief whom they style Emperor ; or, rather, a certain number, named by the rest, draw lots for this honor at the church, when the fortunate individual is crowned by the priest with a silver coronet, wherewith he receives a sceptre, both being previously solemnly consecrated. The ceremony and appropriate service ended, the *Imperador* retires surrounded by crowds of his *confrères*, who strew his path with flowers, receiving in return a general blessing, by the waving of his consecrated sceptre. He then proceeds to a small open rude stone building, erected for the purpose in every parish, called *O teatro do Imperador*; there he sits in state, encircled by his friends, with a table before him on which he receives the donations of the pious, consisting of bread, wine, poultry, and meat, which are carefully distributed in the evening to the poor. The Imperador afterwards retires, with his friends, to his own cottage, which has been previously cleansed, white-washed, and ornamented with garlands, where they indulge in feasting, rustic

games, singing to the viola, and dancing, until a late hour. This ceremony continues during seven weeks, every sunday; and nothing can exceed the emulation that is shewn by the lower orders who are competitors on these occasions: they not unfrequently pawn or sell their whole little property to sustain the hospitality they wish to practise during the term of their reign, when they keep open house for the friends of their circle. At the expiration of the seven weeks, the crown and sceptre are deposited in the parish church, on a silver salver, until the ensuing celebration of the festival.

The women of the laboring classes are made to perform all the burdensome drudgery of life, and it is surprising to see the immense loads they carry with apparent facility; but they, in consequence, soon lose their feminine attractions of person, and become shrivelled, frightfully ugly, and prematurely infirm. The lower orders of the Azores are extremely temperate; and to induce them to become at all profitable customers at the wine-houses, the host (this is an universal custom) cooks for them savoury salt fish, and a stimulating species of sausage, called *linguiças*, which the men are very fond of.

The middle classes, such as tradespeople and mercantile characters, are of a stamp greatly in-

ferior to the same grade in other countries, where, generally speaking, they are the best principled and most moral. Here they are indolent, have not the strictest regard to honesty or honor in the pursuit of business, and are particularly addicted to gambling. They are extremely uninformed; and, to conclude, being under the baneful influence of a bad government, are corrupt and vicious in their habits, tastes, and pursuits.

The higher classes—namely, the Morgados and nobility of the islands, are a pompous, tyrannical race, exhibiting much the same species of despotism towards their inferiors and dependents as the government practises on all. They are nevertheless charitable to the poor; friendly and kind to strangers; and of conciliating dispositions,—though proud to excess, fond of ostentation, and affecting pomp, splendour and opulence far beyond their means. These are likewise in a melancholy state of intellectual and moral abasement, and are ignorant almost of the existence, much more condition of other nations. They commonly terminate their day of idleness by assembling in turn at each others' houses to gamble,—than which no pursuit in life produces greater evils, both practical and moral, and it is unfortunately resorted to

in all countries in proportion to the extent of stolidity.

The ladies, with the exception of music, (which, being a national accomplishment, is frequently executed with skill) possess few acquirements. They are usually awkward and uncouth in their manners, without the slightest conversation in society, and lead a life of supine indolence and seclusion. They are never seen out of doors, excepting at church, or occasionally at some evening festivity. Their sole occupation is eating, drinking, sleeping tremendously, and gazing out of the latticed windows of their verandahs, where they squat, like Indians, cross-legged on their haunches —their heads just peeping from under a falling lattice made for the purpose : here they sometimes pass half the day. Their associates are their female servants, whom they employ as emissaries to collect such news about their neighbours and acquaintance as is most suited to their trivial occupations, and more trivial minds. ' In addition to music, they are passionately fond of dancing and dress ; but, although supplied with materials for the latter from England and France, they display in the making up and adjustment of them a singular absence of taste and neatness. The

walking costume common to the females of the whole islands is a blue cloth cloak, or a black silk one, with a stiff peaked hood, so much closed in front as to leave little more than the upper part of the face visible.

These women possess an amiability and sweetness of disposition which, aided by education, might render them most agreeable companions of social and domestic life. And I have not thus viewed the weaknesses and faults in the character of the islanders with a prejudiced eye, to hold them up to general aversion—but rather for the purpose of pointing out to those who may have any influence on their future destiny, the frightful evils attendant on illiberal government, and an impolitic administration of public affairs. I think the Azoreans possessed of all those natural qualities and points of character calculated to make a good if not a great people, were they to be properly influenced and directed by an enlightened government.

To the political institutions of a country, as I have repeatedly hinted before, may be traced most of the predominant qualities of the people inhabiting it. A reference to all the successive pages of history will serve to shew that, where these have been liberal and wise, the subjects of the state are found industrious, virtuous, and consequently

happy: while, on the other hand, idleness, vice,—and their inseparable attendant, misery—invariably result from oppressive rule and narrow-minded enactments.

Let us therefore hope, under the auspices of the present glorious revolution in Portuguese politics, such a salutary reform may speedily take place in the government, ecclesiastical as well as civil and military, of these islands, as may raise their inhabitants to that rank in the moral scale of nations to which others have attained under the influence of liberty and intelligence.

The religion of the Western Islands is that of the mother country; and the Azorean church was raised to a bishopric in the year 1534, taking its appellation from the capital city, (Angra) which henceforward became the episcopal residence.

The expenses of clergy and church in these islands are defrayed by the state, and they amount to very little less than one-third of the whole public expenditure of the Archipelago, though, at the same time, not exceeding a fourth part of the tithes paid into the hands of government, and formerly exclusively enjoyed by the clergy, as in the mother country.

I may however venture to say, Roman Catholi-

cism, until the present era, has been practised here, if possible, with greater intolerance than any where else, by the hordes of its profligate ministers—who were, for the most part, so unpardonably ignorant, so disgracefully and shamefully vicious, that every establishment or institution connected with ecclesiastical dominion was a source of most serious mischief and scandal. So lax and corrupt, in fact, has ever been the discipline of the church, that its annals are replete with atrocious and horrible pictures of profligacy and crime. Its sacerdotal members, instead of instilling into the hearts of their flocks the pure doctrines of divine truth, and upholding the practice of christian virtues by example as well as precept, have been in the habit of secretly poisoning all the fairest principles of religion and morality, to answer their own depraved and despicable purposes. They have implanted in the minds of the populace a veneration and love for forms and ceremonies always associated with the spirit of bigotry; and, in order to dazzle the vulgar imagination, their ecclesiastical processions are made radiant with pomp and pageantry, and graced (if the term be not misapplied) with a profusion of relics, images of saints, banners, etc.

Until the month of March, 1832, the nume-

rous monasteries and nunneries were, as we have said, a source of incalculable evil. Whilst the former nurtured within their walls a class of beings who prowled about and infested every avenue of society, gratifying unhallowed propensities by means of their religious influence at the expense of the honor, happiness, or property of others;—the latter were esteemed as little better than public brothels, being at all times accessible to young men, who fearlessly and habitually visited the paramours they had chosen amongst those females who had quitted the world with the professed purpose of devoting life to chastity and their God.

Now, happily, His Imperial Majesty, Don Pedro, has nobly commenced the work of reformation in this, as in other particulars—a work which will be recollected with gratitude by all Portuguese friends of christianity and freedom. He has, in fact, abolished all monastic institutions, emptied the convents and monasteries, and fixed a liberal annuity on all their inmates for the remainder of their lives. Thus, by one bold stroke, is deracinated one of the greatest impediments to the civilization and prosperity of a country; temporary evil and inconvenience may arise, as in

every change of system; for instance, the poor who found support at these institutions, are now thrown on the public: but who will say the good shall not predominate, and society be doubly paid the attendant evil? It seems, indeed, to be the unavoidable condition of humanity, that every great advantage shall be counterpoised by something undesirable united with it. The Spirit of Wisdom appears to have prescribed this mingled disposition of things, to remind the beings whom He has clothed with life and thought, that their sublunary state is not a final one, but tending to some higher order of existence, wherein worldly imperfections shall be obviated, and the pure ore sifted from alloying dross. That the condition of the poor might have been alleviated by the charitable feelings of the monastic community, is a postulate that may safely be granted without much lessening the complacent emotions wherewith we are disposed to contemplate its suppression. It has, we are aware, been often urged, with respect to that suppression in this country as well as in others. The state of the poor is, however, susceptible of other modes of amelioration—modes which the improvement of political science promises to render more and more complete (though

mistakes may happen by the way); whilst the ills resulting to society from the existence of these priestly institutions were numerous, weighty and admitting oftentimes of *no remedy*. In addition to this consideration, it must surely strike every candid mind, that the resorting to seclusion from the world is but a sordid method of practising piety—even were it practised. True virtue is exercised in the shock of life: the social scene, for which man is formed and fitted, being the natural and becoming element in which it flourishes and expands.

The mode of building adopted in the Azores is somewhat similar to that of Portugal. The towns and villages have externally a neat, regular and cleanly appearance; and, generally speaking, wear a picturesque aspect, when viewed from the sea, with their numerous convents and churches. The houses are principally constructed of lava, and from two to three stories high, with immensely thick walls calculated to withstand the occasional shock of earthquakes whereto they are subject. But nothing can exceed, not the inconvenience of arrangement only, but the general discomfort and uncleanliness prevailing in every department of the interior, even amongst the mansions of the most opulent morgados or no-

bility. Stables, store-houses, etc. invariably occupy the ground floor; and above are the apartments for receiving company, which are thereby necessarily infested, in that mild climate, with pestiferous odours and noisome insects at all periods of the year, but especially during the warmer season, giving intolerable offence to an European nose. Every house of high or low degree has its latticed verandahs or balconies, commonly in that heavy grotesque form and taste which their progenitors acquired from the Moors; only less altered from the original oriental character than in the mother country.

The streets are very narrow, upon the same principle as in almost all southern towns and cities—namely, to exclude the sun; and they are also badly paved; but, generally speaking, all their towns are so salubriously situated and constructed, that with little expense, on the part of a good energetic government, they might be rendered picturesque, commodious and elegant.

The state of art in the islands is, as the reader will gather from what has already been said, very rude and primitive; and every article of utility that is employed, of their own manufacture, is coarse, unwieldy and awkward. Nothing amused

me so much as their carts, which though probably best suited to the universal character of the roads, are of the most barbarous appearance imaginable, consisting of nothing more than a strong wooden platform resting on a huge powerful clumsy axle, supported by a couple of wheels about three feet in diameter composed of thick solid wood, with an enormous tier of iron to enable them to resist the concussions they receive in going over the rugged, precipitous, rocky masses, there dignified with the appellation of roads; they are drawn by a yoke of two or four bullocks; and when laden, such is the noise proceeding from the grinding of the ungreased wheels, that it requires more than a moderate share of nervous vigour to withstand it.

CHAPTER VI.

POLITICAL HISTORY.

THE political history of the Azores, though not superabundant in matter of general interest, furnishes nevertheless events wherein the more civilized nations of Europe have taken an ostensible part, and which have attached considerable importance to the islands as connected with the mother country. They have never, however, been the theatre of sanguinary wars, or destructive revolutions; chiefly, because, being unpeopled on their discovery, they became an easy bloodless conquest to their first possessors; and since, such has been the general ignorance as to the many valuable advantages a civilized nation might derive from their possession, the degraded condition in which they have existed witholding

from them likewise that political rank and power enjoyed by other more refined countries, they have been prevented from becoming an object of envy, and thus falling a sacrifice to the grasping covetousness of foreign princes, who have permitted them to remain in a comparative state of oblivion.

As before observed, the first years of their colonization passed away in clearing the woods and thickets with which they were covered, for the purpose of cultivating the sugar cane, an article then much encouraged by the government for the consumption of the mother country, and which they first transplanted from Sicily, Cyprus and Candia. But the discovery of the Brazil possessions soon after destroyed this source of industry as well as subsequently that of tobacco, the further cultivation of which here was discouraged to aid the interests of the New South American colonies. To substitute these losses, the vine was introduced from Portugal and Madeira; and the manufacture of wine, added to the cultivation of fruits, has since proportionably increased: they constitute at the present moment, the principal—indeed, the only sources of Azorean commerce.

The mother country, blind enough to overlook the value of such a colony, has totally unheeded

and left it to linger in neglect, from reign to reign, a prey to the licentious and outrageous government of the ecclesiastical, military and magisterial authorities, to which it has more or less been unceasingly subject.

About the close of the fifteenth century, namely, in 1466, Don Alphonso V. transferred to his sister, the Duchess of Burgundy, the whole of the Azores as her marriage portion; and though her possession of them, and indeed her life, was short, her activity and exertions were great in endeavouring to render them profitable. She sent out Flemish settlers under the direction of Job de Huerta, (hence the appellation of Flamengos,) who had scarcely commenced the colonization of Fayal and St. George, before the death of the duchess restored the islands to the Portuguese crown.

In the middle of the sixteenth century they endured considerable calamity from the frequent incursions of the Algerines, who made descents, from time to time, on the different islands; and, after committing every species of violence, robbery and destruction, carried off the inhabitants into slavery. This inimical feeling, on the part of the Algerines towards the Portuguese, commenced with the invasion and conquest of their ports

in Africa, by Alphonso V. from thence surnamed the African; nor has the rancorous feeling yet subsided, but, on the other hand, has descended from generation to generation, to the present day.

The natives of the Azores have been at all times remarkable for a spirit of fidelity to their rightful sovereign, and on several occasions have manifested the utmost energy in resisting foreign aggression.

In 1580, when Philip II. of Spain usurped the crown of Portugal, Queen Elizabeth of England, to aid the cause of legitimacy, equipped a powerful fleet against the Spaniards, a detachment of which she placed for the defence of the Western Islands under the command of Sir Walter Raleigh, who soon fell in with a Spanish squadron of very superior force, which, after a most gallant and furious attack on his part, he totally repulsed and obliged to retire to the coast of Spain. Soon after, however, in 1583, the Azoreans were reduced to the necessity of falling a prey to the Spanish yoke; for in that year a fleet of ninety sail, commanded by the Marquis of Santa Cruz, bearing the *élite* of Philip's army, suddenly appeared off the islands in the absence of the English fleet, and gained a decisive victory over Count Vimiosa of the Azorean squadron

between St. Michael's and Terceira—which obliged them to succumb to the usurper's flag.* From this period, to the end of the century, the neighbourhood of the Azores was the theatre of many naval skirmishes between the English and Spanish men of war; in the course of which, the celebrated Raleigh became a constant source of terror and annoyance to the Spaniards. He completely ruined their trade, captured their vessels, and made frequent descents on the islands, in one of which he, in the year 1586, carried off the governor of St. Michael's. In 1597, he was again dispatched thither by Queen Elizabeth, together with her favourite Essex, to cruize off and annoy the islands—at which period they experienced much disaster from the tempestuous weather, and were separated in a violent gale; but Raleigh meantime took the island of Fayal, and a fleet of ships from the Spanish-American possessions, to the great annoyance of Essex, his commander-in-chief.

The first years of the dominion of Philip in these islands were accompanied by so much resistance on the part of the natives, on account of the atro-

* Southey erroneously states the English to have shared in this defeat.

cious tyranny of the conqueror, that their iron-handed governors, at length sensible of the unwise system they were adopting, altered it, and thenceforward rendered the people comparatively happy and free, a blessing which compensated for their previous sufferings; and it may be justly observed that from this period the sixty years of Spanish yoke became the most flourishing epoch of Azorean prosperity. During that interval, by order of Philip of Spain, were constructed all the fortifications, the principal churches, palaces, and other public edifices which now defend or adorn the towns.

The Azores were the first of the colonies which shook off the Spanish dominion immediately they heard of the emancipation of the mother country in 1640; when the house of Braganza restored the Portuguese monarchy. For a period of two years they were left without assistance from the mother country, during which time they shewed themselves worthy of their fame for intrepidity, by rising in opposition to the Spaniards, nobly contending against their superior military force, and obliging them at length to come to terms. This fidelity, however, has been little requited

by their lawful government. In every way and at all times have they been neglected, with the exception of the ministry of the Marquis de Pombal—the sole minister that ever devoted his fostering attention and consideration to the welfare of these islands; the good effects of which care were soon destined to be destroyed by the bigotry and fanaticism of the next and succeeding legislators. Hence the stationary degraded condition of these wretched islands that has ever since prevailed.

In present times the brave Azoreans have successfully resisted the dominion of the tyrannical usurper Don Miguel; have driven out his minions, and raised the tri-coloured standard of freedom in the islands, by virtue of as fine a specimen of intrepidity as graces the annals of any nation; and which let us hope may, aided by the present efforts, extend itself to the mother country, and thus herald the emancipation of the whole continent of Europe, from the galling and humiliating yoke of civil as well as religious despotism.

After Don Miguel's atrocious, demon-like conduct in the beginning of the year 1828, when he violated his faith and broke all his vows of adhesion to the charter of Don Pedro and of recognition

to the Queen Donna Maria, he dissolved the chamber of deputies, and, supported by the police of Lisbon and their faithful tools the rabble, declared himself absolute king; reducing before the end of July, by a series of victories over the legitimate party, the whole of Portugal and her colonies to his obedience, with the exception of the Azores—which, commencing with Terceira, openly withdrew from the power of the usurper, and in the month of October, that same year, established a provisional Junta.

On the 15th of June 1829, Don Pedro appointed a regency to act in the name of his daughter Donna Maria, the legitimate Queen, to expel the Miguelite troops from all the islands, and to form and mature such plans as might be necessary to re-establish her on the throne of Portugal. The regency was composed of the Marquis Palmella (president), Count Villa Flor, and Josè Antonio Guerriero: and on the 22nd of the same month the Count was created Captain General of the Azores. The regency lost no time in placing the islands in an active state of defence, in order to render them an asylum for all those emigrants who, faithfully adhering to the cause of freedom and legitimacy, resolved to rally round the stan-

dard of Don Pedro for the recovery of the lawful throne of his daughter. However, on the 11th of August their alarms were excited by the appearance of a large squadron belonging to the usurper, containing 3,000 troops; which, after hovering about Angra a couple of days, to create a diversion, suddenly ran down to Porto Praya, distant sixteen miles, where they anchored with the intention of disembarking their troops, and thus, by the possession of Terceira, securing that of the whole islands. But the wisdom of a merciful Providence willed it otherwise: for, by the almost unexampled intrepidity of a mere handful of brave patriots, all their efforts were counteracted; and, although with such an overwhelming disparity of force, they were obliged to return to Lisbon and relate the disgraceful tale of their complete defeat to their despotic master. The invading force was composed of the Don John, eighty guns, three frigates, four brigs, three large charouas (armed transports), besides small vessels and troop ships, mounting altogether 344 guns and containing 3,000 men, besides artillery. Opposed to these were only one regiment of Queen's volunteers and a few of the coast artillery, altogether amounting to about 360 men, commanded by

Major Menezes (an old Peninsular campaigner) on whom devolved the defence of the place. Villa de Praya is situated in a beautiful sandy bay, formed like a crescent, about three miles round, and from the centre of which the town rises with a gentle slope. The latter is defended by a fort immediately adjacent, called the Port Fort, with the Fort of Spirito Santo at the north end of the bay and that of Santa Catharina on the south; all three however in a miserably dilapidated condition, and not containing more than seven guns fit for service.

The squadron anchored at eleven in the forenoon, when the Port Fort immediately opened fire on the line of battle ship, which fire was followed up by the others and most vigorously returned by the whole squadron, though in such bad direction that the balls were picked up the following day to the amount of 3000 on the side of a hill behind the town. At two o'clock the enemy commenced disembarking a column at the Fort Spirito Santo, which they had already succeeded in entering; but were soon repelled with dreadful carnage by the constitutionalists, who mounted the heights above the fort, and independent of their destructive musquetry, hurled immense masses of stones,

which rapidly drove the foe out to the rocky beach beneath, where, exposed to a merciless fire, the wretched Miguelites were almost all either killed or taken prisoners.

In the mean time another considerable column made an effort to land on the right of the San Catharina, but only quitted their boats to meet the dreadful fate that awaited them; for they were massacred with such rapidity, and thrown into such dismay by the confusion caused on a difficult rocky landing place, that they became perfectly paralysed and incapable of resisting the chivalrous defence made by the few brave men who opposed them. During the whole of this period the squadron kept up an incessant fire on the batteries, and such other points as were necessary to cover the operations of the troops: but, marvellous to say, notwithstanding their superiority and the immense advantages they possessed (being almost within pistol shot) so ill directed was their fire that scarcely one shot in a hundred told; whilst the few opposing guns (only five being actually in use,) were keeping up so destructive a fire on the vessels, that at about seven o'clock the whole fleet, after re-embarking the miserable remnants of their army, slipped cable and ran out of the bay,

availing themselves of a land breeze that just then sprung up, and without which they all must have fallen.

It is needless to comment on the merits of this brilliant victory, which, with the name of Manezes, will serve to adorn the future pages of Portuguese history*. It inspired with confidence and good spirit, the defenders of these islands and the adherents of the Queen, who henceforward flocked from out their places of exile and commenced active preparations for offensive warfare, and the recovery of their native land, their rights and freedom. Destitute alike of warlike resources and pecuniary means, the Regency had recourse to public requisitions and private donations; and at the same time to the conversion of all the church and convent bells into a coin for the payment of the troops. The intrinsic worth of this coin was about three halfpence; but for government pur-

* Between three and four o'clock Count Villa Flor arrived, with a mortar field piece and 150 men, but unfortunately too late to share in the glory of the event, any further than employing the pieces against the squadron; the affair was already decided, and the enemy making his preparations to retire. The loss on this occasion on the part of the constitutionalists was only twelve killed, and on that of the enemy twelve hundred.

poses it was rendered current for eighty reis or five pence, which caused many dishonorable speculations to be made in the importation of Birmingham manufactured pieces to resemble them. They were at first also rejected by the inhabitants, who, on account of their little worth and rude unfinished exterior, gave them the epithet of molluccas*, until a decree was passed by the regency to punish whoever either refused to take them or degraded them with the ludicrous cognomen. The first evil was immediately remedied; but the unfortunate baptism of the coin could not be annulled; and the epithet, though at first only continued in an under-tone or in confidence, became at length so general and confirmed, that it is now the only name by which the pieces are known. They have recently, however, all been called in at a serious loss to the government, on account of the quantity forged and imported to the islands.

On the 17th of April 1831, Count Villa Flor commenced his crusade against the Miguelite troops and authorities in the other islands; and having fitted out a little expedition, composed

* Molluco signifies any thing ugly, deformed, or good for nothing.

of 500 men, conveyed in small craft, little better than fishing boats, defended by the two small schooners, the Liberal and Coquette, he set sail for St. George's: but after being buffeted about by contrary winds and bad weather, they were obliged to disembark on the 21st, at Santa Cruz das Ribeiras, in the Island of Pico: from whence they proceeded by land to Magdelena—where, after recruiting a few days, they again embarked on the 9th of May, and landed at St. George's, at a small Port called Ribeira da Nabo, between which place and Porto das Vellas, after a variety of skirmish, with a very superior force, they liberated the island. Count Villa Flor, however, supposing the enemy stronger than they were, returned for aid to Angra; on his return from whence, he found Major Pacheco had bravely led the troops and completed the conquest.

From St. George, on the 20th June, the Count passed again to Pico; and from thence, in the face of a Miguelite corvette, crossed to the town of Horta in the island of Fayal, where he was received with the most patriotic enthusiasm; the garrison making their escape to St. Michael's, in the corvette Isabel Maria. In the following month Graciosa, Flores and Corvo, spontaneously

declared for the Queen, which enabled the regency to turn their attention to St. Michael's, the stronghold of the usurper. Consequently, after various preparations for that purpose at Terceira, Count Villa Flor (whose activity, bravery and patriotism merit the grateful remembrance of his country,) again sailed from the port of Angra, on the 30th July, with 1500 troops, and disembarked on the 1st August at a small rocky* and almost inaccessible place called Pesquero da Achra-

* Some persons are disposed to censure the Count for the choice of such a landing-place: but it was the result of good calculation and military judgment; and it succeeded: for, on account of the unlikelihood of an inimical landing at such a point, it was left undefended (as expected) and the troops were enabled to disembark with impunity. The Count's talents have been illiberally underrated, by many jealous individuals belonging to a party opposed to him. I wish all had equalled him in fidelity, patriotism and bravery. Though not a general of pre-eminent skill, which he had the modesty and good sense to acknowledge, he is certainly not deficient in talent, is honest, upright, gentlemanly, and conciliating. He knows how to make himself beloved both by his officers and men; and with these good qualities is more likely to succeed in an enterprise, than if possessing, without them, the most showy abilities. But be this as it may, Portugal owes him a debt: and his name ought to be enrolled in Lusitanian memorials as a real benefactor to the cause of freedom and regeneration.

dinha, on the North side of the Island of St. Mihael's, where one launch only could disembark at the same time. After two successful skirmishes near the heights of Ponte da Ajuda that day, he on the following gained a complete victory over the enemy's force of 3000 men (besides artillery) posted on a strong position near the heights of Ladeira da Velha. On the 3rd his force triumphantly entered the capital of Ponte Delgada, where they proclaimed the Queen and Charter, in which they were unanimously joined by all the inhabitants. This event with (a few days after) the voluntary submission of St. Maria, completed the total extirpation of the usurper's power in the Azores.

CHAPTER VII.

REVENUES AND EXPENDITURE.

The revenues and expenditure of the nine islands —on account of their neglected, uncultivated condition, as already described, cannot be expected to occupy an extended portion of the statistical review ; although the former, considering such circumstances, are very respectable, and may serve as an index to the immense resources that might be derived under a more prosperous state of things.

The receipts spring from the undermentioned articles ; and, according to the accompanying proportions, are employed in the public expenditure.

RECEIPTS.	CROWNS.	EXPENDITURE.	CROWNS.
Tithes*	220,500	Salary to viceroy and governors . . .	5,000
Customs	110,000	Church and clergy .	80,000
Duties on the transfer of property and salt	40,000	Magistrature† . .	8,400
Duties on books and paper	14,000	Revenue establishments	4,500
Tax on meat and house-rents . .	30,000	Army expenses . .	90,000
Tobacco, soap, and urzella	110,000	Public instruction. .	3,200
	524,500		191,100
	191,100		
	333,400		

leaving a balance of 333,400 crowns, equal to £84,000, which is annually remitted to Portugal, independent of the income arising from all the property attached to the monastic institutions recently abolished; which income, after paying

* The tithes are all in the hands of government, who pay out of them the salaries of the clergy and other expenses of the church, which do not amount to one-third of the entire receipts from this source.

† According to the new laws under the charter, the magistrature are paid entirely by the state.

the friars and nuns the annuity granted them for life, amounts to more than the sum hitherto devoted to the whole government expenditure of the islands. Let us, therefore, conceive for a moment the Azores under the influence of commercial activity, agricultural prosperity, and that general industry which arises from a laudable competition of genius and enterprise amongst the native inhabitants and settlers of a free state. What an invaluable colony! what a mine of riches and statistical resources of every species it might prove to the parent government that could call it child!

But, before this flattering picture can be realized, much remains to be done; and to form a solid basement whereon to raise the splendid superstructure, genius and industry must be allowed unfettered action under the genial influence of constitutional laws and freedom; a consciousness of liberty must awaken the inhabitants to a sense of human dignity; a consciousness that their persons and property will be secured by the administration of just laws, must rouse them from the lethargy of centuries, and prompt them to the wholesome exercise of their energies. And, above all, to give a first stimulus, and to open a passage

for the influx of enterprising speculators—who would, besides example, bring talent, industry, and capital, the restrictive laws of primogeniture and entail *must* be abolished; for their continuance will become an insuperable barrier to every thing like improvement and speculation. Whereas, if the sale of land were thrown open, speculators from all countries would purchase properties; and, establishing homes for the benefit of either climate or commerce, would cultivate and adorn the country, and thus bring, in a very short time, every portion of these islands into the most fertile state of productiveness. Then should we see, in those places which offer facilities for such establishments, capacious ports and commodious harbours formed; docks excavated; even new cities rising; and commerce—the auspicious patroness of a nation's wealth—planting her standard on the Azorean shores, as on one of the future great emporiums of the world.

These islands,—situated as they are in the midst of the Atlantic ocean, between the great continents of the old and new world, and in the direct line of communication for all vessels not only proceeding to Europe from the two Americas, but also from all the Indian possessions, from China

and their adjacent seas,—would then become, (like a comfortable inn in the midst of a tract of deserted country) a commodious and most welcome place of refuge, and a secure resort for such ships as either sought to recruit water and provisions, or an asylum in distress, or to repair damages in cases of difficulty and emergency. Indeed I think they would ultimately become, to the common advantages of all nations, a general mercantile mart; a sort of great central entrepôt for the deposit of every species of produce from the four quarters of the globe; from whence northern merchants, at a trifling expense, and without the necessity of incurring tedious or dangerous voyages to unhealthy countries to supply their markets, at convenient seasons might trans-ship them in exchange for their own goods; and so with merchants of the southern and transatlantic parts of the globe, who would thereby avoid the inhospitable inclemency of northern winters, and the dangerous navigation of our coasts, as well as those of the northern and Baltic seas.

The general advancement of art, and the recent splendid inventions of patent slips for building-yards, together with the new floating break-waters in addition to the more solid ones of stone, pre-

sent every facility for the establishment of harbours, and for taking advantage, with that view, of those places which, previous to the present age, appeared incapable of being converted to so much utility.

In addition to these mercantile points of attraction, I have no hesitation in stating my opinion that the climate alone of the Azores would prove an incalculable source of prosperity. How many would fly thither to enjoy the singularly delicious advantages peculiar thereto, either for permanent residence, or to seek a temporary asylum during the blasts and inclemencies of a northern winter, which weak frames are frequently obliged either to fly from, or fall a sacrifice to.

How many myriads are there, again, who would annually resort hither from all parts of Europe, to profit by the healing virtues of the numerous valuable mineral waters that abound—if civilization, the comforts of life, and medical advice were attainable; thus opening a source of riches to the inhabitants which might (as already has been done in ancient as well as modern days) lay the foundation of flourishing states and cities.

By aid of steam boats, now so much in use and brought to such perfection, all these advanta-

ges would be placed within the easy reach of every one, without any considerable sacrifice of time, trouble, or expense. The traveller, after embarking, might find himself transported in four days from the gloomy skies, the humid fogs, and chilling snows of an English winter, to a country fraught with riches and beauty, surrounded by the smiling verdure of the banana, orange, lemon, and vine, and which, *au premier coup-d'œil*, would appear more like the enchantments of fairyland than real scenery.

These are not the mere dreams of a warm imagination, or hypothetical theories incapable of being verified! No! and I will venture to affirm with the greatest confidence, that, under the wise administration of English laws, and in the possession of the English Government, a *very* few years would suffice to convert these now deplorably neglected islands into a species of terrestrial paradise, and a populous scene of affluence, strength, and prosperity.

The influx of settlers, as I have before observed, would soon produce the combined effects of agricultural prosperity and commercial activity; and thus beget a flourishing population, whose necessary mechanic labours, as in every other

country, would gradually refine into the arts of elegance and luxury, and thereby open new channels for the exercise of genius and the employment of industry.

In support of this assertion, let me only call to view our own possessions in New South Wales, which, although scarcely colonized forty years, and labouring under the great disadvantage of non-communication with civilized nations, as well as of an enormous distance from the mother country, are now enjoying not only the necessaries, but all the luxuries and refinements of life: also, that scarcely the same number of years back, not a settlement existed west of the Ohio in the United States—but where now exists a thriving population of a million of souls cultivating a fertile, productive land, under the influence of civilization, intelligence, and rapid advancement.

What has been done in, and for these settlements may, by corresponding efforts, be accomplished in others. The American territory referred to, possesses not one tithe of the natural advantages of the Azores; nor are the latter exceeded, if equalled, by those of the beautiful region surrounding Sydney. What, then, but that supineness arising from a want of interest in the government under which they live,

and a consequent heedlessness as to the benignant characteristics of their native land,—what else, we ask, prevents the Azoreans from experiencing similar advancement and prosperity ? How deeply is a false system of legislation to be deplored !—since it not only hinders the natural blessings of a country from expanding, but even deadens in the hearts of the wretched inhabitants the *desire* to avail themselves of such bounties !

Reform—that grand principle, whose name has so long operated as a watch-word throughout the wide-extended empire of Britain ;—that principle, the application whereof is calculated to purify all the abuses of time, abuses which naturally gather round and clog every human institution ;—this it is to which the well-wisher of the Western Islands, in common with the entire Portuguese monarchy, must look for consolation and hope. Reform ! it is a cry that should be unanimously raised from the centre of that ancient monarchy to its remotest point—that should swell from the banks of the Tagus, and increase in volume until echoed from the resounding shores of the Azores : and we would urge on Portuguese subjects no wild Utopian theory ; no liberty stretched, and amplified, and abused into licentiousness ; no system which,

looking seductive in the abstract, is yet unfitted to the actual, every-day world. No: our exhortation relates to that which is practicable and sound: to measures cautiously engendered, maturely weighed, and suited to the positive state of the kingdom, and the genuine requisitions of its inhabitants. Such a principle of reform—wisely and, at the same time, fearlessly pursued,—would operate to the political salvation, not only of the interesting Western Islands, but of the still more interesting peninsula of Portugal and Spain; a peninsula abounding in natural gifts and capabilities, and the recollection of whose early history awakens in the mind some of its most noble and lofty imaginings; pregnant as it is with all that is chivalrous or romantic, and, far better, with indications of national genius, enterprise, and greatness of soul. Who would not rejoice to see the kingdoms of Spain and Portugal arise from the lethargy that has so long oppressed them, and not, like the emasculated states of Italy, sink beneath it? What liberal heart would not exult at perceiving the lands of the Cid and of Braganza, of Cervantes and of Camoens, once more taking their proper place amidst the republic of nations?

Reform, therefore, introduced into all the several

departments of the state—cleansing their details, strengthening their efficacy, and rendering their executive administration salutary and popular—would, we repeat, afford the best, the only means of exalting the Azores to their proper standard of value. Don Pedro, as we have said, has begun the undertaking; but, in order to be effectual, it must be followed up resolutely and perseveringly. Centuries of misrule leave, as their pernicious legacy, stains upon national character that cannot speedily be effaced. The common mind of a country becomes indurated by long endurance; and can only be stung into a sense of shame and a resolve to shake the further occasions of it from them, by continued admonition, salutary reproach, and the successive introduction of wise enactments.

CHAPTER VIII.

OBSERVATIONS ON THE NAVIGATION OF THE WESTERN ISLANDS.

THE navigation of the Azores is remarkably free from danger and without any difficulties, except such as arise from the variableness of the weather, and currents to which their vicinity is liable, and which occasionally baffle, in a most extraordinary degree, the attempts of vessels either approaching or sailing through them.

The shores of all the islands are bold all round, and generally without rocks, save such as are distinctly visible and easily to be avoided. The following are the only exceptions which it may be considered necessary to recommend to the caution of navigators; viz: 1st, the Formigas, or Ants, which are a group of rocks lying about twenty-two miles S.E. from Ponte Delgada in St.

Michael's, and fifteen miles N.E. of the island of Santa Maria. They are composed of seven or eight prominent masses extending nearly six miles in a N.E. and S.W. direction, the highest of which is nearly sixty feet from the water's edge, being a little farther to the north than the rest, and having, at a short distance, the appearance of a vessel under sail. This is in 37°.17′ north latitude and 24°.54′ west longitude, perfectly bold on the north side, but shoal to the south. Sometimes, and particularly during the prevalence of N.E. winds, a strong current sets on these rocks from the south, arising from the eddy waters thrown off the island of St. Michael's in a circuitous manner on their direction.

2nd. Nine miles to the N.E. of the Formigas, is another group of rocks, called the Tulloch rocks, from the name of an American captain, who first discovered them in the year 1800. They are twenty in number, just at the water's edge, but present no hidden danger, (except from extreme carelessness,) as the sea breaks over them at all times, even in the finest weather, with sufficient force and noise to give ample warning to an approaching vessel.

3rd. About four miles to S.E. of the Formigas is

a rocky shoal called Dollabret's shoal which also breaks; it takes this name from the person who discovered it in 1788.

4th. The Chapman's rock, which lies at the south entrance of the channel separating Pico and Fayal, and is eighteen feet under water in the following bearing: S. 11°.30′ E. two miles and a half from Point Espalamaca: the marks for which on entering are the pyramidal summit of the Jesuit's college on with the north angle of the convent Del Carmen; and the south point of Monte da Guia on with the Cueva on the east point of the bay of Fiteira. Although so much under water, the sea, during strong winds from the south and S.W. breaks over it with tremendous force, and to an enormous height, oftentimes presenting the appearance of a water spout.

5th. The Goat islands off Terceira, with their adjacent rocks called the Friars—the former situated a little more than three miles to the east of the Mount Brazil and a mile from the shore, and the latter nearly ten miles S.E. from the Goat islands.

I scarcely know of any group of islands more liable to sudden storms, squalls, and changes of weather, than the neighbourhood of these; which

arises as I have before observed, from the frequent variations of temperature caused by their volcanic character, as well as the contiguity of their numerous mountains, which occasions a succession of frequent eddy gusts and calms. These changes are not unfrequently induced by the approach of icebergs, which drift with the S.E. currents from Baffin's bay, and oftentimes occasion a continuance of bad weather whilst they are floating in the vicinity: for, the cold medium which they must necessarily engender and by which they are constantly surrounded as a natural consequence, will on their approach rush in to equalize the more rarefied nature of the volcanic atmosphere, and thus give rise to the violent currents of wind experienced.

The winds that most prevail during the winter months are N.W., westerly, and S.W. with strong gales, and the latter accompanied by heavy rains. Sometimes also south and S.E. with mizzling rains. During the summer the most frequent are northerly, N.E. and easterly winds. But the wind will never be found to settle in any of these points unless it gradually comes round with the sun.

No continuous fine weather may, according to the experience of old observers, be expected at

these islands until May or even later—from the summer solstice to the autumnal equinox: between which periods, frequent long calms prevail, or light baffling airs. As a proof of the gusty, stormy variableness of the winter weather, I may mention the circumstance of a frigate I belonged to in the Queen's service in the month of April, 1832, beating from Terceira to Fayal, when, although only a few miles from the port, and on common occasions but a few hours' sail, we occupied ten days! No sooner had we gained an advantage on one tack, than the wind headed us, and threw us as far off as ever, the wind constantly changing, accompanied with strong gales, which obliged us in this way to make a complete tour of the island of Terceira. We sailed from Angra with a S.W. wind on the starboard tack, by daylight, cleared the south end on the larboard tack, and having made a stretch to the W.N.W. the wind suddenly veered from the S.E.—which, on the starboard tack, brought us in shore considerably to the north of the island; when the wind, strong again from the S.W., obliged us to run round the north of the island, make a stretch to the S.E., and by making a good offing stand up for Fayal; but, on the sixth day, such was the baffling nature of

the winds, that we found ourselves very nearly where we first set out, and did not arrive at Horta until the tenth day.

It is not uncommon for the navigators of merchant vessels from the south Atlantic (particularly the Portuguese and Spaniards) to Europe, to make the Western Islands for the purpose of a fresh departure before they make the continent. However, should they not be in want of provisions or water, and having chronometers on board, I most strongly recommend their avoiding them altogether, keeping well to the westward, and getting into the variables farther to the N.W., where they will find the winds both more westerly and more steady.

The weather off Corvo and Flores is almost at all times of the year changeable and treacherous. Their vicinity is subject to sudden transitions from calms to violent squalls and tremendous gales from the S.W. or N.W. and in summer accompanied by heavy rains, thunder and lightning. The Florida stream frequently reaches the neighbourhood of the islands, striking against Flores and Corvo, where it separates into two currents—one branching off to the north of Corvo and the other to the

southward of Flores, both, however, afterwards taking the S.E. direction.

If at the same time any vessel should, by distress or other circumstance, be obliged to come to the Azores with a likelihood of being detained, there can be no doubt but that the port of Horta is the most eligible, as having decidedly the safest road-stead, besides possessing abundant supplies of provisions and other maritime resources.

STATISTICAL DIVISION

OF THE

ISLANDS.

PART II.

DIVISION OF THE ISLANDS.

THE NINE ISLANDS are, for their political government, now divided into three states or departments, taking their respective names from the capital city of each—namely that of Ponte Delgada, composed of Santa Maria and St. Michael; that of Angra, composed of Terceira, St. George and Graciosa; and that of Horta, composed of Fayal, Pico, Flores, and Corvo—according to which order I will pursue the following individual description of the islands.

CHAPTER 1.

THE DEPARTMENT OF PONTE DELGADA.

THE ISLAND OF SAINT MARY, OR SANTA MARIA.

My only view of this island was on my return with the Admiral from the blockade of Madeira, in H.M.F. Maj. Brig. Villa Flor, when we watered at St. Mary's, and recruited provisions for the crew.

As I have elsewhere observed, this was the first-discovered of the Western Islands, by Gonsalvo Velho Cabral, who gave to it the appellation of Santa Maria in celebration of the day he descried it, namely the fifteenth of August, the festival of the assumption of the Virgin Mary. By Henry I, this great navigator was rewarded for his success by being made lord of the manor (or donatario*)

* By virtue of a royal grant these donatarios or colony-founders enjoyed, for a stipulated number of generations, as a compensa-

of the whole island—which he colonized, cultivated, and some years after resided on, continuing from thence to explore the adjacent seas in search of other islands.

It descended afterwards to the successive branches of his family until the restoration of the Portuguese monarchy under the Duke of Braganza, who then usurped the hereditary right conferred by Henry on the family of Cabral, and portioned the island out to the new favorites among his nobility. Consequently, it has ever since continued to be all composed of morgado or entailed property.

In the sixteenth century it suffered considerably from the devastations of Algerines and other lawless rovers, who not only pillaged the inhabitants, but carried them into slavery.

St. Mary's is about thirteen miles in length, and nine in breadth, situated as nearly as possible forty-six miles S.S.E. from Ponte Delgada, and 750 from the coast of Portugal. It differs

tion for their enterprize, sole authority and right over the islands: they were vested with the whole military, civil and criminal jurisdiction; disposed of the land to whom they pleased; and besides the revenues customary in the mother country, had one tenth of all the produce.

most singularly in its geological features, from all the other islands: for, although it has evidently, together with them, been forced up above the level of the sea by volcanic action, there is every reason to suppose the volcanic fire has never yet found egress from its surface—since no part exhibits appearances of having undergone the action of heat, or of any eruption posterior to its formation; and the component ingredients of the island differ in toto from the rest of the Azores. The whole island is high, composed of slaty rocks in perpendicular layers; forming on every side lofty mural precipices, which descend abruptly to the sea. In a part of this schistose rock on the N.W. side scarcely accessible, is to be seen an immense fossil thigh-bone of some animal (by the inhabitants called that of a man), which has been, by the erosion of rain, partly freed from its bed, and is now seen projecting from the rock. I offered a considerable sum in order to obtain it, but without success.

Overlaying the rock is found, in some parts, large portions of argillaceous ductile paste, which the inhabitants manufacture into a species of coarse pottery, supplying therewith the whole of the Azores: in other parts, quantities of lime,

83804.

containing numbers of marine shells; the lime is also exported to the other islands.

The soil that covers the surface is very scanty; but rendered extremely fertile, by the numerous pure springs with which it is watered. It is susceptible of the highest state of cultivation and productiveness, although this island is less in that state at present than either of the others, on account of the restrictive laws of the morgados to their tenants, and the persecuting abuses of the authorities, which, (it being farther removed from the seat of government and not considered of importance,) are here greater than elsewhere. In consequence of the last-mentioned circumstance, the population, within these few years past, has been greatly diminished by emigration, and now only contains about 5,500 souls; whereas twenty years ago there were exactly double that number. Persons in office have been in the habit of forcing the labourers to work gratis for their own private purposes; hence they fled to the Brazils, to avoid the tyranny thus practised on them.

With an industrious population, and a good government, St. Mary's might easily support between 15 and 20,000 souls. Its climate is superior to that of any of the Azores; and it produces the

best wine, (though in very small quantity), which resembles that of Madeira, and might be cultivated to any extent. St. Mary's abounds with underwood, but possesses very few trees of large growth; it produces quantities of vegetables, and fertile crops of maize and wheat were cultivated; some of which, together with cattle, they annually export to Madeira. On account of the good grazing, sheep thrive here amazingly; and the red-legged partridge abounds in immense quantities; which, together with myriads of poultry and their eggs, render living extraordinarily cheap.

St. Mary's contains one town called Porto, and three villages, viz. Santo Spirito, Santa Barbara and San Pedro.

The town of Porto though of rude appearance and construction is beautifully situated, on a plain at the summit of a hill near the sea, on the S.W. side of the island in latitude 36°. 58′. north, and 25°. 12′ west of Greenwich; and is defended by a small old castle on the brow of the hill in the centre of the bay called Santa Lusia. The bay is small, formed by Point Marvao to the S. E. and Point Forca to the west, both of which have dilapidated forts:—but the anchorage is bad, being exposed to the worst winds, and

not possessing any natural facilities for the establishment and formation of a secure harbour. The best anchorage is 1 mile out in 36 fathoms with sandy bottom; but any farther east it is foul and rocky. The town contains about 1800 inhabitants, who are mostly good seamen and devote their lives to fishing.

It possesses a Franciscan monastery and three nunneries, now happily freed from the useless idle incarcerated societies that inhabited them. The land, in the neighbourhood of the town, is better cultivated than elsewhere: and produces excellent rye, maize, wheat, barley, and delicious vegetables.

The village of Santó Spirito is small, and situated 3 miles to the N.E. of the town, on a high rocky eminence overlooking the sea. Its inhabitants are scanty, poor and miserable, though harmless.

Santa Barbara is a small village situated on the shore, about 3 miles to the north of the last; the country is beautifully varied in the neighbourhood by an undulation of heights and slopes looking to the south, and admirably suited to the cultivation of the grape and tropical fruits.

San Pedro is the largest village; and is situated

on an eminence overlooking the sea about 2½ miles to the N.W. of Porto, with about 1000 inhabitants, who cultivate grain and raise cattle.

There are many other small hamlets and habitations; but the principal mass of the population is on the south of the island.

The Island of St. Mary, is remarkable for having a small islet, at each of its four extremities — viz. at the N.W. that of Frates, at the S.W. that of Ribeira Secca, at the S.E. that of Castello (between which and the South Point there is anchorage); and at the N.E. that of Romeira, which stands not more than 100 fathoms from the shore of a small hamlet called San Lorenzo. It is interesting from two circumstances: first, on account of the holy purposes to which it was devoted in the early ages of the settlement by the members of the order of Christ, who erected there a chapel, sacred to the memory of the day on which St. Mary's was discovered—and to attach to its greater sanctity, as well as *riches*, they constituted it a shrine for the devotions of those of their faith whom they sent thither on pilgrimage; hence its name, "the Island of Romeiros or pilgrims."

2ndly. On account of the extremely curious arched grotto which penetrates it; and exhibits above the arch a variety of human shapes which, the crafty priesthood asserted, were formed by nature in representation of the Virgin and other Saints. But although nature furnished the projecting figures, they have evidently been moulded to the purposes of the monks, by the hand of man. The cavern within is ornamented with groups of beautiful and interesting stalactitic formations.

Between this islet, and the north point of St. Mary's (called Puerta dos Matos) there is a deeply indented bay with a good and the safest anchorage of the island, called Port Lorenzo, open only to the N. E., with a sandy bottom, and which might I think be converted into a moderately convenient harbour. Both at Porto and this place, excellent water, as well as refreshments, are now easily obtained.

If this island were free from the grinding laws of primogeniture, what a fine opening it would present for the speculation of English capitalists, either for purposes of profit or pleasure! tracts of country might then be purchased for a mere trifle, and by industry would produce a mine of riches to the cultivators, either in wine, grain, fruits

of all sorts, or the raising of cattle; the first of which, by a little attention and skill, might be made to compete with the best species of Madeira. Gentlemen, and particularly those fond of yachting, might establish rich tasteful domains for a summer or even permanent residence, if economy and family purposes required it: and would have the power of living comfortably, nay even elegantly, with the most moderate and circumscribed means. Into what a garden, might a few years of English industry and skill convert this island! But, in the hands of its present possessors, it will continue, I fear, in the same wretched depopulated condition, unappreciated by the government, and with scarcely one fourth of its surface in cultivation! Its scanty soil is gradually wasting away, from neglect—which, if permitted to continue, will reduce the island to comparative sterility. The degraded, ignorant condition of the inhabitants may be easily imagined, from the following anecdote related to me by a judicial person, who recently held a situation there. On his appointment he thought it necessary to commence as early as possible the work of reform and amelioration of the state of the island, which he saw was so much required. He consequently issued some

decree relative to that effect, giving orders that it might be stuck up in different parts of the town; when one of his brother dignitaries, an inhabitant, and better acquainted with the character of his countrymen, exclaimed:—"Such a mode of communication is perfectly useless, and might just as well be in Hebrew, or Arabic: for we have only two women and one man in the island that can read!"

CHAPTER. II.

THE ISLAND OF ST. MICHAEL.

THE discovery of St. Michael's originated in the following circumstance:—A prisoner in the Island of St. Mary having escaped to the mountains to evade punishment, during his fugitive sojourn observed, one fine evening, when the setting sun illumined the western horizon with his golden beams, the high prominent peaks of this island, rising like pyramids out of the sea. In the hopes of obtaining a pardon as his reward, he lost no time in communicating the event to Cabral: and thus not only procured forgiveness for himself, but immediately awakened the spirit of research, so characteristic of that great navigator. Cabral forthwith equipped a vessel; and after two or three days beating against light contrary winds, effected a landing on the

8th of May 1444; which day being the catholic festival of the apparition of the Arch-Angel Michael, he, in commemoration, gave to the island the appellation it bears.

As the most favourable position for a first place of settlement, he selected the site of the present village of Povoação on the South Eastern Coast; and on this occasion only left a few African slaves to clear the neighbourhood, and prepare the land for cultivation. However, on the 29th of September, the following year, he returned, with several European families as settlers; but found that a tremendous volcanic eruption had destroyed one of the most promising portions of country he had marked out for future usefulness, and dreadfully alarmed the poor Africans, whose relation of the horrific phenomenon not a little disturbed the anticipations of the new colonists, and required some management, on the part of Cabral, to reconcile them to their lot. He brought with him implements of husbandry, seeds and plants, besides a variety of animals: the only creatures inhabiting the island, at that period, being an abundance of birds, particularly the açor or hawk species. The extent to which the feathered race (exclusively) abounded

in these solitary islands has given rise to various speculations as to the reason of their thus being the sole tenants of the soil, and the mode of their production there,—which however I think may easily be explained; whilst the fact of birds being the only animals found on the islands will serve to prove, in a great measure, the originality of Cabral's discovery.

Had the Western Islands been previously known, and visited by any other nation, they would (as in all similar cases) have had domestic and other quadrupeds introduced on them—remnants and traces of which must have existed, unless by some extraordinary intervention of nature, at the period of Cabral's visit. But birds may have found their way thither without the aid of man, either from the numerous migratory races that are known to wander across the sea, or those almost of all species, occasionally driven by strong easterly gales and bad weather from the continent of Europe, to immense distances on the Atlantic. I have, myself, frequently seen pigeons, larks, linnets, owls, and oft-times hawks, taken from the masts and yards of the ship at sea: and many of them in distress, on the unfriendly element, may in the same way have reached the Azores;

established a new domicile, and thus, in the course of ages of undisturbed possession, increased their various species to the remarkable amount for which these islands were notorious.

The Island of St. Michael lies nearly E.N.E. and W.S.W., about 45 miles to the N.N.W. of St. Mary's. The eastern extremity, called Pontà de Lomo Gordo, is in 37° 46′ latitude north and 25° 12′ longitude west of Greenwich: and the western extremity, called Punta Ferreira, in 37° 52′ north latitude and 25° 55′ west longitude. It is 45 miles in length and from 6 to 12 in breadth; exhibiting in its physical character a more evident instance of the peculiar volcanic features of the Azores, than do any of the islands of this Archipelago; and although it is capable of sustaining a million of inhabitants, its population, at the present period, only amounts to 110,000 souls.

Ponte Delgada is the capital town of the island, and of the department; and it is also the largest, as well as the most populous, flourishing and commercial city of the Azores. It is situated on the south side between Ponte Delgada to the west (from whence it takes its name) and Point Gale to the east, in 25° 36′ west longitude and 37°

40.′ north latitude, and distant from the coast of Portugal 212 leagues. It is defended on the sea side, to the west, by the large castle and fort of St. Braz, which can mount 90 pieces of cannon, and by the two forts of San Pedro, and Rosto de Cão, 3 miles to the east.

I saw it for the first time on the 22d February, on our arrival from Belle Isle; from whence we conducted His Imperial Majesty Don Pedro, to assume the command, and organize the forces destined to rescue his bleeding native country: the tricolored ensign of Donna Maria flowed at the peak, and the Imperial Standard at the masthead. We approached under a change of salutes between the batteries and our ships; and, I confess, after the Portuguese encomiums of Ponte Delgada, I was disappointed with its appearance, from the water. It is far from picturesque, exhibiting a compact uniform mass of bright-looking buildings on the borders of the sea, varied only by the remarkable undulation of conic hills, rising from behind the town—some of which, however, I must not omit observing, are cultivated to their summits, being covered with orange quintas, gardens, and plantations: this extraordinarily elevated scene of rich luxuriance affords to a Eu-

ropean eye, a novelty in beauty, and serves at the same time to prove the remarkable mildness of the climate; since, even in the genial climes of Spain and Portugal, it is necessary to select low sheltered spots, for the growth of the lemon and the orange.

The city contains 22,000 inhabitants, and evinces a considerable degree of wealth, activity and industry, when placed in comparison with the rest of the Azorean towns. On the present occasion we saw it under auspicious circumstances, in a sort of holiday suit; the whole population being in movement, to see and welcome the imperial leader. Festivities, private as well as public, civil, military and ecclesiastical, in honor of His Majesty's visit, diffused a brilliant gaiety over the city, not witnessed in it before, within the memory of the inhabitants. The first defect that forced itself on my attention, was the diabolically neglected condition of the pavement: but such is the general form and interior arrangement of the town, as well as the solid and uniform style of its buildings, that I could not help remarking what a handsome city it might be made, with expense and labor both trifling, under the municipal regulations, enterprize, and industry of

my own country. It contains six churches, eight monasteries, and four convents; and the unceasing ringing of bells in these, from day-break to dark, was sufficient to disturb the nervous system of the most Herculean man unaccustomed to such a deafening, doleful din. There is also a neat English chapel recently erected, for the benefit of the resident families of our nation.

It was market day, when we landed; and the congregated population of buyers and sellers, created a noise and confusion, (particularly when aided by the host of squalling pigs constituting a staple commodity of an Azorean market,) that faithfully represented the united characteristics of Babel and Bedlam; for the Portuguese, of all classes and both sexes, are loud in their loquacity; and, when animated, elevate their voices to an unnatural soprano pitch, that is beyond conception harsh and disagreeable. I am no admirer of the language; and although I cannot boast of knowledge sufficient to offer a critique on its qualities, as to idiom, construction, and expressiveness, I felt adequate to judge of its comparative merits, as connected with the ear. It is totally devoid of euphony, but replete with harsh nasal sounds: neither in its prose or poetry, is it distinguished

by the charm of musical sweetness: indeed with the excepted names of Camoens and one or two others, Portugal has never been ennobled by genius to redeem its defects of dialect.

The market was abundantly supplied with a variety of fish, poultry, eggs, vegetables of all sorts, calavanças, the yam, sweet and common potatoes, oranges and lemons, etc.; every thing being remarkable for its cheapness, notwithstanding the increased prices caused by the unusual influx of strangers connected with the expedition.

When relaxation from professional business admitted, I lost no opportunity of going every where, and seeing every thing. Consequently, in turn, and, in company with the Admiral, I visited the various monasteries and convents, which are the first objects of attraction to all (particularly English) strangers on their arrival here; the first being celebrated for their riches, relics, and beautiful church music; and the latter for their exquisitely delicious sweetmeats and cakes, delicate embroidery, beautiful feather-flowers and ugly women. We were received with very different feelings, according to the order we visited; for politics infested the cells of these holy recluses; and each convent or monastery warmly espoused the cause

of Miguel or Pedro, *of course* as influenced by the opinions and *interests* of their directors, with a virulence and party spirit that became quite ludicrous in such persons. However, at *all* we were received with courtesy; and, as is usual towards every visitor of respectability, the lady abbess invited us to partake of their sweetmeats—whilst herself and a few of the most favored nuns, who were permitted to advance behind the iron grating, continued in conversation, some offering for sale or presenting bouquets of beautiful artificial flowers, manufactured from the plumage of Brazil and other birds, so ingeniously selected and arranged, as to suit the coloring and form of almost any known flower. Whilst at the convent of Esperança, which is the richest of St. Michael's, we observed immense trays of cakes and sweets being dispatched outwards; which, on enquiry, we learnt were for a civic entertainment preparing for the Emperor, and that the inhabitants on such occasions, as well as all evening parties, depended on the convents for these supplies—there being no confectioners. In these interviews, I invariably observed a marked curiosity to hear of worldly pleasures and enjoyments; and the soft unction of flattery, however exaggerated, was never mis-

placed and always met an expressive return of gratitude from the sparkling glances of fine black eyes. But these restrictive communications, I soon learnt, were mere matter of form on first acquaintance; and that to those who cultivated further intimacy and propitiated the guardian abbess, access to the interior was not impossible. Indeed, at one of the islands, a lady abbess plainly told me on one occasion, that "now-a-days the scaling of walls and breaking of iron bars was no longer necessary;" and such was the freedom with which this liberty was used, that the greater number of the convents of the Azores became ultimately little better than a species of brothel, filled with cloistered prostitutes, where every married as well as single man had his favorite paramour; thus poisoning the very roots of virtuous society, and breaking asunder the bonds of domestic life.

There is an air of studied style, of coquetry, and fashion, about the costume of the Azorean nuns, that I have never met with in other countries. According to the order of the sisterhood, it is either white or black, and is in some of the convents modelled with peculiar gracefulness. In all, the hair is scrupulously covered with a black silk cap, closely fitted to the head, over which is

thrown a long white veil, that falls in elegant folds over the shoulders, discovering just as much of the face as the beauty or ugliness of the wearer disposes her to show. The dress has its arms full, and drawn tight at the wrist, frequently displaying beautiful small hands: it is oftentimes girt tight to the form of the waist. The nuns are always *chaussées à merveille*, as the French would say, and whether with large or small feet, invariably have an appearance of ladylike neatness and cleanliness. The costume at the convent of Nossa Senhora da Conceiçāo, struck me as the most elegant; it is white, with a star and crucifix worked in gold and silver on the left breast—and in addition to the black silk cap, has a light gauzy front standing erect round the border, (very much like the Bernese coiffure) which gives an air of lightness and beauty to the whole.

Happily, as our readers have been already apprised, these sources of religious profanation and impurity are now no more; and the buildings, as well as revenues and lands attached to them, are made over by Don Pedro to the uses of the public treasury. The future visitors to the islands may thus lose the gratification of purchasing their beautiful flowers and sweetmeats, whilst flirting

with the incarcerated nuns, or of indulging in the captivating music at the church ceremonies of the monks. But religion will thereby become freed of one of its main-springs of corruption, and morality of its greatest bane. That such a measure was essential to the progress of civilization in the islands, and to the happiness and interests of the public, there exists not a shadow of doubt, and the intention did honor to the head and the heart of the man who had the *principles* to project, and the boldness to carry into effect such a proposition; but it has since become a question as to the policy of executing it, or even breathing a hint of the intention at *that critical period.* I, for one, feel confident it has proved the principal cause of prolonging the civil war in Portugal, by arraying against the legitimate cause of Donna Maria, the whole host of monastic orders, together with the entire ecclesiastical influence of the mother country, where they very naturally anticipated the same levelling system would be followed immediately on the accession of the Regent to power in Lisbon. Hence then all the blind zeal and enthusiasm, in favor of Don Miguel, on the part of the peasantry and the soldiers; who, ignorant and bigoted, have been goaded on to fury by wicked priestcraft

and despairing monks. Had prudence wisely suggested the delay of such proceedings to a more fitting season, I do not hesitate in saying, that the contest would have terminated on our taking possession of Oporto. Instead of which, the ecclesiastics—whether on the little territory we held, and which professed friendliness to our cause, or along the whole line of country subject to Don Miguel, either overtly or in secret, lent their powerful support against us; whilst the monks, on many important occasions, with the crucifix in one hand and sword in the other, led the combatants to battle—and at all other times, actively used the rifle where they could with impunity deal death from behind some wall or covered way. Besides the whole enlightened part of the nation sighing in secret for a more liberal policy, every order and class of society became weary of oppression, and felt willing, at any sacrifice, to shake off the galling yoke. These feelings and this disposition were unceasingly communicated to our party —which, I have no doubt, inspired Don Pedro with too much confidence, and thus led, at a moment of exhausted resources, to the premature and imprudent experiment. The history of ages has shewn us that religious fervor is a formidable

power to oppose, particularly when bigotry and superstition follow in its train; and that it requires more than common sagacity to wield the sword against its influence; the present case affords a powerful confirmation. Notwithstanding the expression of these sentiments, however, I still hold, that if the constitutional cause proves successful, and the same monastic and conventual dissolution as at the islands is enforced in the mother country, it will be the accomplishment of the first and greatest task in favor of regeneration. It will require both decision and skill; *mais ce n'est que le premier pas qui coûte*, and the fruits will repay the price. The reflexions I have previously made on this subject relative to the Western Islands are equally applicable to Portugal; and, let it be understood, I mean not to wound the feelings of the Portuguese, or to insult their creed—no! I respect every man's creed, however opposed to my own; but I cannot see the abuses of it practiced at the sacrifice of the best interests of mankind, without contributing to the expression of horror such profanation deserves. Oral confession is an abuse; so also is the adoration of relics; and the observance of festivities in honor of a host of pseudo saints: they are all the work of priestcraft,

employed more especially by the monastic fraternities to subject the human mind to the purposes of priestly power and pleasure. They constitute the immediate cause of the degradation of a people, and operate as a powerful check to the progress of social and moral worth. The confessional exposes every one more or less to the abuse of its privileges; and who or what Portuguese will not say, that he every day sees the practice of such abuses, particularly by the various orders of friars that infest his country, whose example bring religion and the more respectable body of the church into contempt, far beyond the redeeming power of its precepts.

Our visit in St. Michael's, at this period, was but short; my little excursions were confined to the immediate neighbourhood of Ponte Delgada; and I then became intimate with the amiable governor Count d'Alva, from whom, as well as other intelligent persons, I gained every local information. Early in the morning, I wandered about the environs in search of the picturesque, which (from the idea I had of the land teeming with golden fruits) I expected at every step to meet; but alas! to my utter disappointment, it existed not. The immediate neighbourhood

consisted of nothing but a succession of enormously high stone walls which enclose the gardens, the quintas, and residences of the Morgados,—wherein however, the riches and luxuriance of the island might be seen to perfection. I experienced no difficulty in gaining access to several of these, and was astonished to see the splendor and prodigality of nature so little appreciated. True, the hand of taste must have first formed them: they are all intersected by walks, covered with various trees, flowers, or the vine, and sometimes by avenues of the white rose and the variegated camilla japonica, which in these islands are frequently seen rising up with the strength and grandeur of forest trees.—These quintas are frequently rented by the foreign residents and merchants (particularly English and American) whose abodes alone exhibit the beauties of ornamental gardening, notwithstanding the slightest attempt to adorn any portion of ground according to the rules of taste peculiar to our native land produces a blaze of exuberant riches and magnificence in shrubs, flowers, and fruits, that cannot easily be imagined. One beautiful evening, tempted by open gates and the sun's declining rays illuminating a little forest of flowers, I entered one of

these Eden-like spots—where, inspired by admiration of the summer-like splendor (in the middle of February) that surrounded me, I exclaimed: "what a thousand pities, such a lovely country should be in the possession of Portuguese, who so little know how to value it!" At the same moment I was accosted by a sweet little blue-eyed girl, about eight years old, who, although with a foreign accent, was evidently English, and replied with much feeling: "Oh, Sir, it was papa who did all this; the Portuguese are too idle; they only sleep, smoke cigars, and play at cards." Outside these towering enclosures scarcely a tree is to be seen; and the tracts of cultivated soil are covered with grain, pulse of all sorts, and vegetables. This, however, is the fault of the cultivator, not of nature—since, by a very few years' exercise of industry and taste, I am persuaded any appearance even of the most foresty character may be given to the face of the country,—whether for ornament or profit.

The Admiral, ever assiduous in the interests of the country whose cause he had so enthusiastically undertaken, being anxious, (for the information of the Portuguese government) to ascertain the capabilities the various islands possessed for

establishing sheltered harbours and other resources for shipping, took every opportunity of surveying and examining the coast, under the guidance of the capitão mor (master attendant), on which occasions I always accompanied him; and on the 26th of February we made an excursion to survey a volcanic island called the Ilheo of Villa Franca, with its adjacent anchorage, which is about six leagues and a half along the coast N.E. from Ponte Delgada. An intelligent Brazilian was of our party, and after an early breakfast we started about eight o'clock. The wind was foul, and freshened as the sun rose, which prevented our arriving before eleven o'clock, when we disembarked and commenced our observations. This little islet, or *ilheo*, as it is familiarly called by the English as well as Portuguese, stands exactly in front of the town of Villa Franca, a little more than three quarters of a mile distant. It is of submarine volcanic origin: being a tuff composed of scoriæ, volcanic cinders, and pumice, cemented by a yellow paste. In form it resembles the conic apex of a volcano, with its exterior sides of an inaccessible mural character, rising to a height of 400 feet, and from the summit shelving away in the interior at an angle of 45° to the base, where

Admiral Smyth del.

On. Smeeton. Hughes.

VILLA FRANCA.

from the Solfatara extinct Crater.

Day & Hague Lithrs to the King Duke of.

there is a bason of water about 290 feet in diameter, with a sandy bottom—of irregular depth, but which might be modelled and excavated at the will of a projector. The bason communicates with the sea by means of an aperture on the S.W. side, independent of a narrow channel that was cut on a low part of the rock, opposite the town, by the Spaniards in 1590, for the purpose of admitting small vessels, for which they constituted this place an excellent harbour; and to afford further shelter, erected a strong barrier wall at another small opening on the S.E. side, where the sea dashes in with violence during the winter gales. The wall, however, from long neglect, has totally disappeared; and the whole place is deserted and unappreciated by its present possessors. It is quite uncultivated, and only covered in parts by a little coarse herbage, cane reeds, and a few heaths. Our party reposed some time on the heights and we were almost simultaneously struck with the singularly romantic view our situation commanded. Looking through the opening on the N.W. side, we had a beautiful picture of the town of Villa Franca, with its undulating heights and rich-looking environs: these, seen as through a vista, were combined with the rude grotesque

forms of the lava boundaries of the Ilheo, in the foreground; the lake beneath with two or three dilapidated small craft then lying there; while another prominent object consisted of a group of fat rubicund friars, at that moment revelling over a savoury pic-nic on the side of the rocks. The whole constituted as fine a specimen of the picturesque as Poussin, in his most fastidious moments, could have desired: nor was it thrown away upon the graphic powers of the Admiral, who committed it to his sketch-book whilst standing there.

The interval between the Ilheo and the town forms an excellent anchorage, from four to nine and ten fathoms, with good holding ground; and it is this locality which, I conceive, presents more advantageous means for the establishment of a port and harbour for vessels of every size and draught, than any other part of the Azores. Equally essential with the adoption of a liberal policy, and the abolition of the law of primogeniture, (which I have already suggested as indispensable to the prosperity of the islands,) is the establishment of safe commodious ports; for whilst the former gives stimulus to industry, the latter furnishes means of exercising it; no efforts of human industry being available, unless a market

can be found for purchasing its fruits; and here commerce is the great agent,—the channel whereby wealth and general prosperity are to be secured.

In the chart accompanying this work is a plan of the above locality with the proposed alterations; and although I have no doubt many more skilful improvements may be subsequently suggested for converting it into a perfect harbour, this plan appears to me the most easily reducible to practice under existing circumstances.

At the extremities of the town are two forts, the one to the west being called Fort da Forca, that to the east Fort da Area, between which the distance is little more than three quarters of a mile, the Ilheo lying in front at pretty nearly the same distance to the S.W. Off Fort da Area is a reef of rocks, just covered at high water and running out 100 fathoms in the direction of the Ilheo; upon this, as an excellent foundation, I would recommend the erection of a strong stone breakwater, to be carried out in the same line an equal distance beyond the end of the reef which will be in seven fathoms, the opening between which and the island would become the eastern entrance into the harbour, to be defended from the heavy violent sea that sets in with the easterly

winds, by *floating** breakwaters moored in either single or double line across the entrance so as to form an effectual barrier. The same plan I propose being observed between Fort da Forca, and the Ilheo, to form the western entrance and boundary of the harbour, carrying out the stone breakwater from the shore a little to the eastward of the Fort (where it is shallower) to seven fathoms, in the direction of the Ilheo, with the floating ones as at the east entrance moored in succession abreast the opening, to defend it against the S.W. winds and sea, which are the most violent; the latter however being somewhat broken by the reef of rocks that runs out from Punta da Galera.

The anchorage thus enclosed would constitute an excellent safe harbour; whilst the bason and interior of the Ilheo being converted into a government arsenal, with a line of quays, stores,† building

* The floating breakwaters have been proved, by numerous trials, a most efficacious substitute, where the depth of water is too great for the use of stone. They become a barrier against the heaviest sea, and where there is a double line are of such effect, that a vessel may ride to leeward with equal safety and tranquillity as in the most sheltered port.

† The rise of water being very limited here, Morton's patent

yards, etc., along the shore of the town, would complete its perfection and render Villa Franca a maritime resort of first-rate accommodation, as well as a secure retreat for vessels traversing the Atlantic. Commerce would triumphantly preside there, and the tide of riches soon flow through it, into the whole Western Islands. In such a case, Villa Franca would become the most suitable place for the seat of government and the metropolis of the Azores; from whence a good road of communication formed to the southward would also give increased improvement and activity to Ponte Delgada.

This plan may probably seem too theoretical and extensive to the Portuguese, to be reduced to practice. Let them however by a proper policy throw open the doors of enterprize, individual speculation, and competition, and they will soon be made sensible of the rapidity and facility with which such public works are executed without becoming a burden to the government. Self-interest stimulates the skill of speculators; and companies sometimes undertaking an important task, remunerate themselves, besides conferring

slips for hauling up vessels of any size and tonnage for repairs, would be found an invaluable acquisition.

a benefit on the public. Besides these considerations, *here* labour is cheap; and whatever materials or aid might be required from Europe, the fruit vessels (which always come out in ballast) would afford a convenient means of conveying.

About three o'clock we again entered the barge; and being desirous of visiting the celebrated mineral springs of Furnas, we spread our canvass and made a rapid run to the mouth of the river Quente, about six miles N.E. from Villa Franca. On the east side of the embouchure, two or three schooners were lying snugly under the land just opposite a solitary chapel, and some adjoining cultivated lands and vineyards; where our companion informed us there was good anchorage frequented by vessels that run in there occasionally for shelter in a N.W. gale.

On landing we procured donkeys; and after refreshing ourselves at a miserable cottage with some boiled eggs, bread and cheese, and sour wine, we proceeded on our journey. The river Quente (or hot river, so called in consequence of taking its source amongst the hot springs) reaches the sea through a deep, wooded, romantic-looking ravine, by the western side whereof we bent our way—gradually ascending, along an undulating

surface, the mountain of Guaitiera, which is about 3,000 feet high. Our donkeys were frisky; and our party kept alive by the drollery of our Brazilian friend, who interlarded his intelligent communications with an occasional *piquant morceau* at the expense of some holy friar or pious nun. The path, although narrow and tortuous, was of a more grand and romantically picturesque character, than I had observed in any of the Azores. Sometimes it led along the borders of a deep precipice, overlooking the thickly wooded chasm beneath; sometimes through a narrow pass hemmed in by spreading umbrageous forest trees—or by high embankments, whose summits were crowned with the cedar, the myrtle, and the faya, or with rich luxuriant ferns of enormous dimensions gracefully hanging down the sides. We met with one or two rude-looking hamlets, uniformly marked by a rippling stream and a tottering bridge; and on gaining the summit of the mountain, commanded a prospect down the gorge of the Ribeira Quente to the sea, that was remarkable at once for its expanse, sublimity and beauty. From thence the path led, down an abrupt descent, into a dreary, arid-looking houseless valley, surrounded by a chain of scorched volcanic hills;

and with a lake in the centre called Alagoa das Furnas, about a mile in length and half in breadth. Its waters abound in gold and silver fish, and it is constantly covered with sea-gulls and wild fowl, which pamper their palates with this epicurean food. On the opposite side of the northern end, we observed dense columns of white smoke, curling up along the side of the adjacent hill; which our friend informed us proceeded from boiling ferruginous springs, forming part of the territory we were about to visit, and were then not far distant from.

Very different from the Portuguese in general, this man was an enthusiastic admirer of the beauties of nature and of romantic scenery; and judging by the animation his countenance betrayed, he evidently anticipated much gratification from witnessing the effect, the approaching scene would produce on our minds. The path led beside the lake to the end of the valley, where it conducted us by a winding road down a gentle declivity, over masses of crumbling pumice; and at a short distance, abruptly turning to the right, as suddenly developed a bird's eye view of the celebrated Valley of Caverns* beneath, the boast of the Azorean

† The Val das Furnas, or Valley of Caverns—so called, from the number of caverns with which the surrounding hills are pene-

Islands! At our friend's request we closed our eyes before reaching the turn that commanded the entire view; and, on a given signal, re-opened them; my disappointment however, was, I confess, very great; and my cold exclamation of "*Cela ressemble un peu un paysage Suisse,*" occasioned an equal degree on my guide's part, and somewhat damped his ardor in the cause of *lionizing*, which reminds me of a somewhat similar circumstance that I witnessed in Rome, with an old English general, whose greatest delight was to act the cicerone to strangers in the Holy City, and particularly to astonish them with a first sight of his favorite remnant of the imperial ages, the Colosseum. On the occasion alluded to, he eagerly fastened on a friend of mine, who had scarcely five minutes before stepped from his travelling carriage, and persuaded him to proceed at once to the far-famed amphitheatre; before coming in sight of which, however, he enjoined that the eyes should be closed: and on gaining the limits of the Cœlian plain, he exclaimed; "Now, sir, see and admire!" which was no sooner uttered than replied to by my friend, who totally unlike an amateur observed, "How very like the cork

trated, and which the legendary traditions of the friars say were formerly inhabited by monks.

model I saw in London!" Suffice it to add, the old gentleman, disgusted and disappointed, ever after abandoned his practice of lionizing.

But to return to our valley; it is almost a circular bason, nearly ten miles in circumference, entirely hemmed in by a chain of rugged unproductive mountains of pumice and other volcanic matter, with no other outlet than a narrow defile on the N.E. side, through which the river Quente makes its escape to the already mentioned ravine. The bason somewhat resembles an inferior Swiss valley; and to an eye praticed in Italian and Helvetian scenery, is remarkable for little beyond the pleasing contrast it offers to the surrounding scene of desolation and unproductiveness. The plain is indeed extremely fertile; and the village called Furnas is favorably situated in the centre, possessing capabilities of improvement to a boundless extent. Columns of vapour are seen rising from the neighbouring springs, which on first gaining sight of the valley, produces a curious and novel effect.

It had about 500 inhabitants with a good church and a Franciscan monastery; but the houses are rude, comfortless abodes, and the people miserably poor notwithstanding the productive lands that

surround them—for which fact, the church and the monastery will account better than I can.

We descended into the valley by an abruptly steep path ; at the bottom of which, before reaching the village, we crossed a turbid, blood-coloured stream* of strongly impregnated ferruginous water, which takes its source in the adjacent mountain of Pico da Fer, from whence it brings a saponaceous adhesive sediment, that imparts the most fertilizing qualities to the land it traverses, and is found particularly favorable to the growth of the yam, which is largely cultivated here. Having gathered in its course all the little tributary streams from the hills, it becomes bright and clear, traversing the village by the Franciscan convent, after which it receives all the hot waters from the neighbouring springs, and hence takes the name of the river Quente.

We took up our quarters at a house belonging to a friend of our Brazilian companion; and although it was not of princely character, we heartily enjoyed the rude comfort and repose it afforded after our journey. Like Jack Straw's house,

* The water of this river has a harsh disagreeable taste, to which however habit soon reconciles the palate ; and the inhabitants now constantly drink it by choice.

it was neither wind-tight nor water-tight: it seemed indeed as if a blast from the mountains would annihilate it; and we had the additional luxury of being in close communion with a numerous tenantry of pigs and poultry, etc. by day, whilst by night we were kept in prolonged reflexions, by the *châtouillant* gambols of every variety of polipeds. In the morning we rose early to visit the springs; and after a comfortable breakfast of Indian corn bread (which is invariably eaten by the Azorean poor), eggs, and excellent milk and butter, again sallied forth.

The springs lie about a mile to the north of the village. They are not confined to one spot; and in point of variety, quantity, and quality, surpass all I ever met with in any other part of the world. The approach to them exhibits the most inhospitable scene of arid desolation imaginable: mephitic, and sulphureous vapours float over the surrounding neighbourhood, and are seen incessantly bursting from numerous fissures, accompanied by violent hissing noises, similar to the escape of steam from an engine. Besides innumerable small streams and springs rising out of the surface of the ground in every direction, there are three large caldeiras, or basons of boiling water, in a constant state of

violent ebullition, accompanied with occasional subterranean explosions and other noises. The largest caldeira is about twenty feet in diameter; from the centre whereof a column of boiling water rises to two or three feet above the surface, diffusing a cloud of hot vapour which is unendurable when standing to leeward. The cattle however are frequently observed to place themselves under its influence, to destroy vermin, or heal any cutaneous affection, information which was given by an old man who was boiling his yams in the spring at the time: and crossing himself he offered a pious ejaculation to the mother of God, who he said his Franciscan neighbours told him, presided over the territory, and brought these grateful waters for the benefit of the inhabitants.

The temperature of the water is from 80 to 220° of Fahrenheit, with the thermometer at 69 in the vicinity. The component ingredients are found to be carbonic acid, sulphurated hydrogen, carbonate of potash, a trace of magnesia, with silex, iron, etc; but the proportions have not been accurately ascertained. The overflowings of the bason precipitate an immense quantity of fine silicious sinter, which forms in layers half an inch thick, to the depth of a foot for several yards round; and at a greater distance, a coarser variety is observed mixed with

clay, enclosing grass, ferns, reeds, and leaves in all the successive stages of petrifaction, from the first soft state, to their complete conversion to stone; and a breccia is now forming from this, including obsidian, pumice, and scoriæ, firmly cemented by this sinter, and becoming a close, compact, solid mass. Some fine specimens of this sinter are frequently found with a beautifully semi-opalescent lustre.

Closely adjacent to the above caldeira, is one not so large, nor with the same degree of high temperature; but in other respects, pretty nearly coinciding with its general characteristics. The surrounding earth is covered with chrystalized formations, precipitated from the floating vapors: and the fissures are frequently discovered to contain large deposits of sulphur. The earth also, to a considerable depth, partakes in some places of nearly the same temperature as the water; and the poor of the village are oftentimes seen using the one or the other for boiling or baking their yams or potatoes.

About ten yards north of the great caldeira, is a third called the Pedra Botiglia; it is situated in a low cavernous position, the water bubbling up with violent ebullition, as from a caldron;—accompanied, as in the other, by a variety of loud

noises. It throws up an immense quantity of saponaceous mud, whose healing qualities, in cutaneous diseases and ulcerated cases, are proved to be singularly efficacious. But the most curious phenomenon for which the Pedra Botiglia is celebrated, is, that if persons make a loud noise at the embouchure of the caldeira, the boiling water will rush out beyond the spring, to a distance in proportion to the violence of the concussion, and has been known to be ejected as far as ten feet. I confess, I was somewhat incredulous when first told of this; considering it what, in maritime language, we should term a *friar's yarn;* but judge of my astonishment, when the united vociferations of our party verified the story: and our Brazilian friend assured us that, on some occasions, he had seen this angry demonstration of the water accompanied with flame and smoke. Now, ye sagacious philosophers, employ your genius, to account for this phenomenon!

A short distance to the westward, from this place, are innumerable other springs, which though minor in size, are yet of a most valuable character: some are cold, containing muriatic, sulphuric, and carbonic acid, with iron, alumen, and magnesia; one, strongly impregnated with fixed air, is

extremely, agreeable to the palate, possessing strong digestive powers, and creating almost *immediate* appetite. Another has a powerfully acid quality (not disagreeable to me); a third, a sharp saline bitter flavour. Immediately adjoining these, are hot ferruginous springs, which have accomplished the most wonderful cures, as well as a cold one of similar quality, in another direction. To this latter, a poor man, whose leg, covered with ulcers, bade defiance to the medical skill of the island, had recourse, and the application of the water, as well as of the muddy sediment, twice a day, effected a perfect cure in a fortnight. Some of these hot and cold waters are conducted to a set of baths, erected for the accommodation of invalids; but I apprehend it would require some philosophical effort, to induce a civilized person to resort to such revolting looking places. They are, in truth, by no means equal in accommodation to those provided for the animals of an English gentleman's *bassecour*, being of rudely hewn, common stone, not in any way so neat as our swine-troughs. I feel convinced, at the same time, that the full value and importance of these mineral waters are not yet known, they never having been carefully analized by a skilful hand, and

consequently many more desirable qualities and virtues may remain to be developed.

How much to be lamented, that such a place should remain as it were unknown, unused, all its advantages lost to the world! Were the island in the possession of the English, how soon should we see a little Cheltenham rise up, with its baths, pump-room, libraries, hotels, lodging-houses and promenades, together with every other requisite that can contribute comfort or luxury to healthy or invalid visitors! How soon should we see every inch of ground brought into cultivation; the country teeming with the ornamental as well as useful riches of the vegetable world; and an air of happiness, contentment, and intelligence, diffused amongst the natives, at present ignorant and miserable; under English dominion, the springs alone would become a source of prosperity to these islands. The land every where in the valley is fertile: the pasture rich beyond conception; and the trees, particularly evergreens, large and luxuriant.

The morning was delightfully fine; and it is impossible to describe the pleasing, exhilarating effect produced by the incessant singing of those innumerable birds of different species inhabiting

this valley—in the enjoyment of which, we bent our steps towards the village, and visited *chemin faisant*, a fanciful quinta built by the American Consul, who is an intelligent man, and has exhibited considerable taste and ingenuity in the arrangement of the garden grounds, water and plantations; but on account of its distance, and the bad roads from the capital, it lies now, notwithstanding its beautiful attractions, and capabilities of improvement, neglected and dilapidated.

When will the Portuguese emerge from the apathy and semi-barbarism, in which they have existed for so many centuries?

We now took leave of the valley of Furnas; and although its scenery did not altogether harmonize with my notions of the *beau idéal*, I was amply repaid by a visit to these wonderful springs, which merit the attention of every observant man. The day had suddenly changed; and our return was not under the most auspicious circumstances. Rain fell in torrents, from the time we quitted the village until we reached Ponte Delgada at four in the afternoon; the paths over the pumice became slippery down the mountain, which retarded more than common the pace of our long-eared steeds, and obliged us frequently to dismount, where the

saponaceous mud rendered it almost impossible for the animals to proceed.

The following day orders were issued for the admiral to be in readiness to convey Don Pedro and suite to Terceira; but a few days before sailing, a ball at the English Consul's, the Civic fête, and one in return at the palace, afforded us an opportunity of seeing society—for every body was there; and, as on all these occasions, the women arrayed themselves in a formidable unbroken phalanx, scarcely exchanging a word, even with each other—whilst the men formed in a separate *corps sur pied;* creating the most deafening noise, by their soprano loquacity. The females, however, I found passionately fond of dancing, though badly dressed even with good expensive articles, and certainly not scrupulously clean in person; affable and kind nevertheless, though deficient in manner to *gaucherie;* and being uneducated, they are altogether without conversation, and therefore incapable of manifesting their amiable dispositions through the fascinating medium of colloquy.

On the 2nd of March we embarked his Imperial Majesty and suite for Terceira, under the usual exchange of salutes with the batteries, and did not return again to the island until the 30th of May.

Nature had now clothed the country in its most captivating costume; which, under the influence of a beautiful sky and a remarkably mild, agreeable atmosphere, gave to it a most attractive character. The climate of St. Michael's is uniformly soft and delicious, though extremely humid in consequence of the immense process of evaporation and absorption that is unceasingly going on; but this, as I have already observed, is unattended with any inconvenience that may not be easily remedied.

The Admiral and myself were this time billeted in the house of one of the most affluent morgados; and it is impossible to express, in sufficiently strong terms, the attention, kindness and hospitality that we experienced from all branches of the family, which was composed of the lady and gentleman, three little children and the sister of the wife, all alike amiable, friendly and accommodating. The house was spacious, well built and roomy, with a good suite of entertaining-apartments, which, however, smelt not only fusty, but potently of the stables underneath: they were besides, according to our ideas, badly and scantily supplied with furniture; and such as was there, had apparently been handed down with the rest of the family entail through a series of generations. The ladies

never appeared but at breakfast or dinner; in the culinary preparation of which meals, they always took part. A profusion of badly kept plate was generally exhibited, and the remnants of breakfast frequently covered the table until the arrival of dinner-time. All, of course, was of Portuguese cookery, (with a few exceptions, to suit English taste,) greasy, unpalatable, and unsalutary. Little conversation took place that was not forced by ourselves—not, however, apparently for want of inclination, but of means; for a totally neglected education, and a life of seclusion (the females scarcely ever going out, as before remarked, but to church or evening entertainments) preclude the possibility of cultivating them either theoretically or practically. The children—nice interesting little urchins—seemed also lamentably overlooked: since, with the exception of being dressed up occasionally, to shew themselves at the dinner table for our gratification, or on a Sunday, they run either about the house or back-garden with a nurse all day, almost in a state of nudity, their few clothes and their persons covered with filth and rags to such an extreme, that no English person would know them from children of the lowest order.

Our host spent his evenings in meeting his male friends, who assembled to gamble at some Portuguese game of chance on the cards, at which they continued frequently until one or two o'clock in the morning; and thus days, weeks, months and years pass on without one point of time redeemed by pursuits more profitable either to themselves or mankind at large.

Ponte Delgada now assumed all the character of a warlike town. Our squadron was assembled in the roads, together with 6000 tons of transports; the military had all united from the different islands, preparatory to the final departure; and on the 6th of June, for the first time, the Emperor reviewed the whole body (only amounting to 8,000 combatants) which in appearance exhibited all the merits the cause required. The ceremony was distinguished, as on all similar occasions, by the presence of the élite of the island, which furnished us an opportunity of witnessing the style of the Michaelian aristocrats and exclusives; for the pride and presumption of that class, in this island, surpasses the similar display in all others. The gentlemen, with a pompous demeanour suited to their individual power and importance, attended on rudely caparisoned horses; whilst the ladies, most fantas-

tically dressed in party-colored robes and ribbons, were closely ensconced in the family equipage, which consisted of an antiquated, gothic, crazy, cramped-up chaise, on four wheels, or a covered cabriolet on two. These were drawn each by a couple of horses or mules—the postillion being decked out with a livery characteristic of the general appearance of the vehicle—the *ensemble* of which seemed to have been handed down from the period of the Braganza restoration in 1640.

The following day was ushered in by a heavy gale from the S.W. which obliged every ship to weigh; and in an hour after breakfast not a vessel was to be seen in the roads; for the anchorage, independent of being exposed, is excessively bad holding ground, with a foul rocky bottom, on which account the commerce of Ponte Delgada is carried on by small craft, which run out immediately the wind sets on the land from any of the points between S.W. and N.E. whereto it is exposed. Ponte Delgada, however, is not without the means of remedying this inconvenience and securing an incalculable increase of commerce. There is already a good solid mole erected near Fort St. Braz—enclosing a sort of bason, which might, with little difficulty, be cleared for the

entrance and accommodation of small vessels ; and, in addition, I would recommend the excavation and conversion to a dock, of the adjoining square of St. Francis, to which the former might be united by a narrow canal, the buildings round the square being appropriated to mercantile stores and other offices. With the cheapness of labor and facility of obtaining building materials, the expense would be trifling when compared with the advantages that must infallibly accrue. In such a case traders, immediately on arriving, would enter this bason and thence haul into the dock, where, secure against every danger, they would remain until ready for sailing again with an outward cargo ; and thus would be avoided the average annual loss of four or five vessels. It would be even to the interest of Lloyd's to lend their assistance towards the encouragement of such a work.

There is a British Consul General at Ponte Delgada. Much of the trade of the place is carried on by English residents, whose attention and hospitality, on the present occasion, to the officers of our little constitutional squadron will, I am persuaded, be ever recollected with feelings of gratitude by all. Our countrymen, however, loudly complained of a want of the same hospitality on the part of the

Portuguese, who it was thought ought to have manifested their gratitude towards the auxiliary officers as defenders of their cause; but ample allowance and excuse may be made, in many ways, to redeem the national character of the islanders, who are certainly not deficient in the above-named quality. In the first place, every house and family had numbers of military—frequently to an inconvenient amount—billeted on them; besides which, party feeling, inimical to the cause in general or personally to Don Pedro, gave rise to a schism in society which during our sojourn was strongly marked by both *malhado** and *corcunda* (the epithets by which the Miguelites and constitutionalists distinguished each other's party) and occasioned amongst all classes a reserve uncommon to their usual character.

English families are considerably increasing at Ponte Delgada. They rent the neighbouring quintas, of the natives; and there display the ornamental taste peculiar to their own country. It is by these grounds and gardens, under the influence of order, arrangement and horticulture, that the

* *Malhado* in Portuguese signifies piebald, and *corcunda*, deformed.

capabilities of the soil and effects of the climate are to be more correctly estimated.

On the eighth I set out with some friends on an excursion round the island. We started at seven in the morning, each provided with a donkey and cloak, and with a guide for the party. It must be remarked that the donkeys of St. Michael's are of excellent breed, and so numerous, that it one day gave birth to an effort of wit on the part of Don Pedro, who, on the fact being observed to him, and feeling discontented for some reason or other with the natives, tartly replied, "Yes, there are 100,000 in the island!"

Our intention was to pass by Villa Franca and the N.E. side of the island; the road lay along the coast, which is rugged and abrupt, composed of large masses of rocky lava: about three miles from the city we passed through the large village of Rostedecão, situated picturesquely at the bottom of a bay formed by a projecting promontory of lava, which is so disposed as to offer capabilities for the establishment of an excellent little harbour, whenever the prosperity of the island is such as to encourage the experiment. Three miles beyond this place we entered the town of Alagoa, which stands.

on an eminence, looks striking from the sea, and is defended by a fort, with a little port and anchorage on one side and the bay of Alagoa on the other. It is a place of considerable importance and comparative prosperity, containing about 4,000 inhabitants, who, for a wonder, are extremely industrious; the maritime portion of them being excellent fishermen as well as good sailors. This was the native place of our guide, who was formerly a fisherman; but with a melancholy shrug he said, "Before we brought our fish to market there was scarce sufficient left to purchase support for our wives and children, for whom we had been toiling all night, frequently to the risk of our lives. Immediately on landing we were obliged to pay a tithe to the church, an offering to the Franciscan monastery, and a portion to the government; therefore, Signors, I quitted that occupation to gain my livelihood where I could make as much, and perhaps more, without the same risk and labour." I sensibly felt the force of the poor man's story; it confirmed my notions of the miserable policy of the government, and of those abuses of the church I had been long alive to; and in sympathy I gave the narrator a few mollucas

for his children, to whom he hastened, whilst we dismounted to water the donkeys.

I feel happy in being able to add, this system was abolished during our sojourn at the islands, —a circumstance which diffused contentment and joy amongst the poor fishermen, who were ever afterwards, (under such feelings of independence,) more ardent in their vocation; and this soon produced an evident difference both in the supply and price of the market. Will not this apparently trifling occurrence afford an important lesson to the Portuguese government? Until this period, this poor class of the population throughout the Azores, as well as in the mother country, have always been subject to the extortionate practices of the church, independent of the rigorous imposts of the government;—for besides the tithe given to the parish priest, there is always one or more monastic establishments in the neighbourhood that claim an offering to support the sacredness of some patronizing or miracle-working saint.

The country surrounding Alagoa is extremely rich and fertile, producing grain and wine, with an abundance of the finest oranges and lemons of St. Michael's; and we spent a quarter of an hour

in an adjoining orange quinta,* where an intelligent old man amused us with a history of the growth and cultivation of that fruit, to the following effect. The orange plantations, or quintas, are in general the property of the morgados; they are of large extent, always encircled by a wall from 15 to 20 feet high, and within a thick plantation belt of the faya, cedar tree, fern, birch, etc. to protect the orange trees from the sea breezes.

The trees are propagated from shoots or layers, which are bent at the lower end into the ground, and covered with soil until roots begin to strike, when they are separated from the parent stem and transplanted into a small excavated well about three feet deep, (lined with pieces of lava, and surrounded at the top by plantations of laurel, young faya and broom,) until the tender orange plants are sufficiently strong, at which period the plantations immediately round them are removed, and each plant begins to shoot up and flourish, after which no further care is taken of it, beyond tarring occasionally the stem to prevent injury by insects; and it in time spreads out with the majestic luxuriance of a chestnut tree. In this country, it

* Quinta indifferently signifies a country-house, orange plantations or garden.

only requires seven years* to bring an orange plantation to good bearing; and each tree, on arriving at full growth, a few years after, will then annually, upon an average, produce from 12 to 16,000 oranges; a gentleman told me he had once gathered 26,000.

The crops are purchased previous to their arriving at a state of maturity by the merchants, who ascertain the value of the probable year's produce through the medium of experienced men, and then make their offer accordingly. The men thus employed to value orange crops, gain a livelihood thereby; and such is the skill whereto they attain, that, by walking once through a plantation, and giving a general glance at the trees, they are enabled to state, with the most astonishing accuracy, on what number of boxes the merchant may calculate. It becomes, however, quite a matter of speculation to the purchaser, as orange crops are a very uncertain property, and subject to various casualties between the time they are thus valued and the gathering. For instance, a continuance of cold north or north easterly wind will cut them off;—a violent storm will sometimes lay the whole

* In Europe—namely Italy, Spain and Portugal, it requires full twenty years to attain the same perfection.

crop on the ground in a night, or it may be entirely destroyed by insects.

Nothing can exceed the rich luxuriant appearance of these Hesperian gardens, during the principal fruit months — namely, from November to March; when the emerald tints of the unripe and golden hue of the mature fruit, mingle their beauties with the thick dark foliage of the trees; and the bright odoriferous blossom, which diffuses a sweetness through the surrounding neighbourhood, is quite delicious.

The present amount of oranges and lemons exported, is upwards of 120,000 boxes, and nearly seventy or eighty vessels are sometimes seen lying in the roads, waiting to carry them to Europe; besides these, a large quantity of the sweet lemon is cultivated for the consumption of the inhabitants: it is produced by grafting the sour lemon on the orange, but is tasteless and vapid, though esteemed salutary and refreshing by the natives.

There is a species of epicurism peculiar to the Azores with respect to oranges, particularly observed by the higher classes, who only eat that side which has been most exposed to the sun, and is of course, in its fresh state, easily distinguished by the tint—a refinement we are unable to emulate, the color being rendered uniform by age.

For a few moments we entered the Franciscan monastery, whither the British corps of marines belonging to our auxiliary squadron had been transferred, subsequent to the dislodgement of the holy fathers: it consequently now exhibited a ludicrous contrast to its former purposes; for the various cells of the monkish fraternity had become the resting-places of a riotous soldiery; and the refectory was converted into an officers' mess-room, wherein, previous to quitting the island, was displayed a scene of heretical festivity, with anything similar to which its walls had never resounded since their first erection by the hand of catholic priestcraft—and the witnessing whereof would have infinitely shocked and scandalised the holy fathers, as being a species of excess not of their own introduction. The occasion was a review by the Count Villa Flor, who only intimated his intention early the same morning; however, a little fête in the form of a *déjeûner à la fourchette* was got up, quite *à l'imprévu* by the officers, for the entertainment of the favorite commander-in-chief, his staff, together with the ladies and others who accompanied them. As if by magic the walls were tastefully clothed with floweret wreaths and coronets, or with festoons of laurel; while myrtle and orange boughs were interspersed, with appropriate

mottos and devices, executed in the best style that a general contribution from the officers' supplies of Day and Martin would permit. Devotion to the cause, patriotism, and general harmony increased the hilarity of the meeting, and the evening closed by desecrating the sacred walls with an extempore hop, which the commander-in-chief's amiable little countess proposed, as an inducement for us to quit politics and the bottle.

We again mounted our steeds and cantered away: the road now retired somewhat from the shore—still however, keeping in view the sea, which was enlivened by numerous vessels, that had been driven from the anchorage. About three miles farther, we traversed another small town called Aguadepau, containing about 3000 inhabitants, and similar in style to Alagoa, surrounded by a productive neighbourhood of fertile heights. This place is well irrigated by numerous streams of excellent water, which are employed in turning mills, and might, under the influence of greater prosperity, be converted to a thousand valuable manufacturing purposes. The grape is also carefully cultivated here, and produces an excellent species of wine; indeed, on enquiry, I found the wine of St. Michael's to be quite equal to that of

Pico, but not cultivated to any further extent than is necessary for the consumption of the island.

The road hitherto from Ponte Delgada was comparatively good and practicable for wheel-vehicles; but from hence to Villa-Franca (two and a half leagues farther) it becomes execrable, though wild and romantic; sometimes leading through a narrow pass cut out of the intervening heights of pumice, at others descending to the shore along tracts of almost imperviously deep sand and lava scoriæ.

We reached Villa Franca about twelve o'clock, and partook of the kind hospitality of a major of militia who commanded there, and invited us to adjourn to his house during the mid-day repose of our mules. The town is one of the oldest established in the island of St. Michael. It originally stood considerably to the westward, until the year 1522, when, by the violence of a volcanic eruption from Pico da Fogo, the two adjoining hills of Lorical and Rubaçal were forced from their basements, scattering their *débris* over the town, and burying beneath the ruins nearly 4000 of its inhabitants, besides every other living thing that existed there. But, with the peculiar tenacity of human beings to their native soil, the town was soon rebuilt on its

present site, and now contains a population of 5000 souls, with several churches, two monasteries and convents—and a castle, which, together with the two fore-mentioned batteries, constitutes the defence of the place on the sea-side. It has an incomparably beautiful appearance from the water, as well as from the heights behind, whence the neighbouring country appears of the most fertile and luxuriant character: indeed, in depth and quality of vegetable soil, I never witnessed its parallel, and the fact was strongly supported by the exhuberance of its productions. The oranges here are extremely delicious, and the grain of all sorts excellent, as well as the wine, which is plentiful. Formerly, when the rearing of the pastel-plant and sugar-cane was encouraged, this part was, on account of its soil, the most affluent and prosperous of St. Michael's. I must here remark that the cultivation of the island, since its first discovery, has experienced several periods of prosperity, varied by the narrow miscalculating policy of the mother country. The first period is marked by the growth of the sugar-cane, and it proved a most flourishing epoch, until the discovery of the Brazils; the second by the profitable cultivation of the pastel-plant, which was crushed through the avarice of

John III, who overburdened it with duties. The third flourishing era, was during the free trade in grain with the mother country—which trade being abolished, the natives were obliged to pursue the present cultivation of the orange and lemon, which is annually increasing, and the produce exported in large quantities to England, France, Russia, Holland and the United-States. During the last ten years this trade has, in fact, augmented most rapidly; and in similar proportion, the number of orange and lemon quintas has multiplied throughout the island.

The fruits of Villa Franca in general are superior to any other in the islands; and the richer inhabitants seem disposed to continue the progress of improvement by exercising their agricultural knowledge in planting, pruning, and grafting.

After our little repast at the Major's, as I wandered up an eminence adjacent to the town in search of the picturesque, I was attracted by the fine commanding position of a quinta, and the consequent anticipation of a beautiful prospect from its grounds. I had no sooner entered than I met with the owner—who courteously invited me to advance; and, after pointing out the most advantageous *point de vue* (which was really splendid from the terrace of the *parterre*,) he conducted me to a garden he

had just completed, and planted with many species of the plum, peach, apricot, and other fruit trees, in imitation of the English style, to which he had paid much attention: "For," he observed, "he had been an exile in England; and in the neighbourhood of Plymouth, where he had experienced unbounded hospitality, had paid considerable attention to our system of gardening, which he was now endeavouring to practice." He added, "If, Signor, your countrymen had this island, it would soon become one entire garden."—I observed some excellent pasture around, and a superior breed of cattle, for which he said Villa Franca was famous, and that by attention it might be brought to great perfection. He complained bitterly of the larcenies committed by the French troops belonging to our expedition, who were quartered in the town and made nocturnal foraging excursions over the neighbouring properties. I confess they exhibited a poor specimen either of the civil or military character, for which latter the French nation are celebrated. I thought our own countrymen (the marines) bad enough on their first arrival, but really a more barbarous, riotous, disorderly crew than these Gallic volunteers could not exist. When they disembarked, they appeared neither friendly

disposed to Portuguese nor any one else, nor indeed in harmony with each other; one immediately on landing, being opposed by a comrade, bit his nose clear off, and would have done more mischief had not others interfered. This is but one of many specimens of their atrocious misbehaviour, to encourage which, I am sorry to add, the example of their officers was not wanting; their commanding officer, in truth, resigned in disgust and returned to his country.

It was a regular nocturnal habit of these heroes to carry scaling-ladders to every accessible point of the convents of Villa Franca, either by wall or window, and lay siege to the cells of the fair inmates, where more opposition was offered through the precautions of my lady abbess than the disinclination of the veiled sisterhood. Nor indeed, should I feel disposed to regard as any deadly sin this exercise of military prowess in the shape of devotion to the fair, had they not, likewise, wantonly defaced the chapels, and, by unhallowed misuse of the sacred symbols, insulted religion itself.

These midnight excursions were frequently attended with the most ludicrous incidents. On one occasion a gallant of this kind, on entering the cell

of his appointed favorite, found himself, at the interesting moment, forestalled by a fat friar, whom he no sooner observed than, hailing the assistance of some of his comrades, he stripped the holy father to his *birth-day* attire, and conducted him into the square—where they gave the alarm of "thieves!" and "fire!" thus bringing out the public to view the anomalous situation of their ghostly pastor and master.

I could cite many other similar anecdotes, did I not dread the execrations and vengeance of the puritans and prudes.

The convents had been dissolved, the day previous to our arrival; and all the elder nuns, whom we saw in a private house, were still in tears, bewailing the (to them) miserable change; for the feelings and attractions of youth being past, they had no longer any thirst for the world's pleasures: their habits, their pursuits, and their ties were within the walls, and with the society they had left.

At two o'clock, our guide and our donkeys having taken their siesta as well as mid-day meal, we again proceeded on our journey, and traversed nearly five miles of flat dreary country over a bad road to the village of Pontagarça; from thence, after crossing the river Quente and its romantic ravine,

we continued for nearly the same distance and along an equally bad road (though with improved scenery) as far as the village of Povoação, already mentioned as the place of Cabral's first colonization. The wind was blowing fiercely, and the wild glare of the declining sun, combined with the echoing toll of the vesper-bell, gave a Salvator-like effect to the scene as we passed through this place. The village stands on a gentle eminence, watered by the trickling stream of Mohinos, and surrounded by cultivated plains and woodland which terminate in elevated peaks and hills in the background. The country abounds in chestnuts; and the inhabitants, amounting to about 600, breed cattle and cultivate the grape, which yields an excellent species of sweet wine. Why Povoação has not risen to greater eminence, since its first discovery, I cannot imagine, possessing, as it doubtless does, equal local advantages, if not greater, with other places now of higher importance in many parts of the island. I made several subsequent excursions to the spots most worthy of notice and admiration, and ascended the heights of Maffra, from whence looking down as it were upon all the details of the island, I was enabled to form a more correct estimate of its general character, which cannot be

properly imagined without viewing its aspect from some of the dominating heights of Maffra, Fogo, or Varra.

The S.E of the island as far as Povoação is bordered by a low rocky coast composed of a congeries of volcanic fragments of comminuted masses of lava, slag, tuff, and in a few places of trap assuming a columnar form ; from whence, towards the centre, it gradually rises by an undulating succession of hills, distinguished by their peaks and cones, separated by deep valleys, and intersected by tremendous chasms, ravines and gullies, which sometimes present wild bare precipices, in other places rich verdant slopes covered with the indigenous luxuriance of nature ; and occasionly romantic dells embosomed in forest wood mingled with the orange, the lemon, and the banana. Towards the sea are interspersed beautiful acclivities, either enriched with indigenous productions, or clothed with the various fruits of cultivation—vineyards, orange groves, quintas, cornfields and plantations.

The mountains are never of primitive formation, and, almost without exception, the production of volcanic eruptions ; composed principally of cinders, conglomerates, and particularly of pumice (an article

which in St. Michael's abounds in every part to a greater extent than I have ever witnessed in any volcanic country). They are, for the most part, bare and uncultivated; indeed in the same neglected state with the whole centre of the island. The contrast between these sublime monuments—with their arid, austere aspect—and the beautiful luxuriant spots adjoining, is calculated to inspire the reflective mind with lofty sentiments. Placing these heights in comparison with even the most splendid efforts of human skill and labor, how do the latter sink into positive insignificance, and expose the feebleness of our nature thus humbled before the Author of all Being!

The people of Povoação are remarkable for their constitutional feelings; and as we passed through, they, recognizing our party as belonging to the expedition, lavished benedictions on us, with a prayer that we might soon send back their husbands and their sons; for all were more or less interested in the general levy that had been made to complete the military force. The evening turned out clear, mild, and lovely; and from this place we proceeded along the coast, passing through the small village of Fayal da Terra, about half a league distant, and one league farther to the town of Nordeste,

where we arrived about eight o'clock and took up our quarters at the house of a family to whom we were recommended.

Nordeste stands at the easternmost point of the island, on a high rocky coast: the town was built in the early part of the sixteenth century, but contains few more than 2,500 inhabitants, who, moderately industrious, cultivate large quantities of grain of all sorts. The adjacent heights are, in places, covered with wood—which, with its quintas, and gardens, its monasteries, convents and church, give this town from the sea, a picturesque appearance. Our arrival was not viewed with the most amicable feelings at first; and scarcely a man was to be seen in the place. We were avoided, or received in a way that manifested fear, suspicion and even hatred. Our guide at length explained this by telling us that a general consternation had been, unconsciously to us, spread in the town by one of our party, who jokingly said to a man, on entering, that we were come to take all the men away for Don Pedro's fleet; and I dare say that for the space of an hour, until the explanation took place, Don Pedro's name received nothing but execrations and abuse.

On rising in the morning, we found the sky

overcast, the wind increased to a heavy gale, and the distant sea heaving its billows on high with foaming fury, whilst, under the land, the waters were in the most unruffled calm, for the wind was from the S.W., blowing over the land.

Nordeste, being quite at the point of the island, has an exposed rocky anchorage immediately off the town, but offers every accommodation a mile to the S.E., opposite a chapel, in eight fathoms, with a safe sandy bottom, forming an excellent place of retreat for vessels in southerly, or westerly gales—a proof of which presented itself before we quitted the place: for our flag ship, the Rainha de Portugal, having been buffetting against the gale the whole morning to windward, to the great peril of the crazy masts, at length bore up, and ran for shelter to this place, where it was curious to see her experiencing the momentary transition from a tremendous sea and furious gale, to perfectly unruffled water with scarcely a breath of wind to bring her to the anchorage. In this gale, the schooner Liberal narrowly escaped total destruction, by the ignorance of her Portuguese commander; we saw her evidently in distress in the offing, having run too far to leeward to fetch in under the land, and we afterwards learnt that

in scudding under a *close reefed* MAINSAIL, she broached to, and was as nearly as possible capsized; as it was, she filled with water, and in their fright, when the danger was past, they threw all the guns overboard.

We sauntered about the neighbourhood of the town from an early period in the morning to view the country, and did not get away before nine o'clock. From Nordeste round the western coast, the island changes its appearance, and presents for the most part a line of rugged heights, which in many parts rise up abruptly from the water's edge, sometimes exhibiting a cultivated front towards the sea, covered with vineyards, patches of cornfields and gardens; sometimes wild barren-looking rocky heights and basaltic hills more stupendous and majestic than on any other part of the coast. The lava soil, too, wherewith it is covered, is more generally decomposed; and, being watered by innumerable streams, it has altogether a decided superiority over the south, and this portion of the island might be made very much richer and more prosperous, if they had a market for their produce and consequently a stimulus to improvement and cultivation.

The roads of communication between all parts

of the island, excepting just in the vicinity of the capital, are mere rough goat paths, inaccessible to any vehicle; and this at once prevents the possibility of interior traffic by the exchange of produce, interposing a formidable barrier to the progress of commerce, or civilization. I was particularly curious in remarking the agricultural resources of the country whenever I visited it; and could not help concluding that nature had accorded to St. Michael's, in particular, a superior capacity for seconding the advantages of climate; such, indeed, is the productiveness of its soil, that vegetation, in whatever form it appears, whether cultivated or indigenous, possesses a peculiar and surprising richness and exuberance. The grain crops are never known to fail; and with even the little agricultural industry that does exist, nearly 900,000 bushels of grain, independent of pulse of all sorts, are annually raised, one third of which is exported to Europe. I observed the Indian arrow-root everywhere growing in abundance; and was told by some English residents that it is very little inferior to that of America. The earth is also covered with aromatic herbs, plants, and wild flowers springing up; as we saw them at that beautiful season, in all the splendor of cul-

tivation procured by the pampered nursing of a London market gardener. Were facility of intercourse established by the prosperity of the island, and were the purchase of land made easy, how admirably adapted for a vast horticultural establishment would St. Michael's become!—where, through loveliness of climate, aided by the industry and scientific skill of some of our English gardeners, the fruits, plants, trees, and flowers peculiar to every part of the world, might be reared to perfection; and thus, by the rapid communication of steam-boats, the markets of England might be as regularly and cheaply supplied with the exotic productions of a tropical climate as with those of her own. The rich and more delicious fruits of the warmer latitudes, together with the beautiful and hitherto rare specimens of their floral tribes, would find an easy transfer to our chilly shores, as well for the gratification of various florists, and amateur gardeners, as for the luxurious boards of the rich. By the bye, such is the sweetness, brilliance and variety of the wild flowers in all the Azores, that it is difficult to conceive in a *prima facie* view why the honey (which everywhere abounds) should be so inferior in flavor and possess so little of the saccharine matter when

compared with that of our own country, where nature is less bountiful as to means.

From Nordeste, the road leads along the borders of the island through the village of Nordestinho, from whence the coast trends to the S.W.; and successively passing through the villages of Achada and Achadinha, we reached Fenaes d'Ajuda (three leagues and a half from Nordeste,) about ten o'clock. This portion of road was rather interesting and picturesque, which qualities were enhanced by the bright gleams of sun over a richly clothed country on one side, whilst on the other, the roaring billows of a troubled ocean beat with incredible fury against the iron-bound coast; this side of the island being now exposed, as the wind blew from the S.W. We were at this time passing over the ground which Count Villa Flor (now Duke of Terceira) consecrated by the victories he obtained with his little band of invaders over the Miguelite guardians of the island. He disembarked on the most inhospitable looking rocky point, called Pesquero d'Achadinha; took his adversary (who little expected him at such a place,) by surprise; and after two successful skirmishes near the heights of Ponte da Ajuda to our left, he the following day most

completely thrashed, and put the whole body to rout on the heights of Ladeira da Velha, a little farther in the interior—after which, marching to the capital, he took possession of the entire island in the name of the Queen.

Before entering the village of Fenaes da Ajuda, we were all much amused with the agricultural team and apparatus of a farmer. It consisted of four donkeys fastened together by a combination of decayed knotted ropes, and attached to a crooked piece of wood (seemingly the arm of a tree) tipped with iron, which bore the dignified epithet of a plough. The farmer's occupation too was somewhat novel, affording, on explanation, some rather interesting information on the subject of Azorean agriculture. He was ploughing into the soil a crop of half grown lupins, the seeds of which are exported in large quantities to the Brazils, where, made into some culinary preparation, they are patronised by all classes.

Our friend, though apparently flattered at being able to enlighten us on any subject, was not over courteous in this interview, for he was a bit of a Corcunda, and turned his donkeys again to the clods, with an air of hatred and contempt, as we bade him adieu. However, we soon found it was

only the echo of political feeling, diffused around this country by the neighbouring Franciscan friars, in the village, who had only very recently received *notice to quit*, according to the decree of Don Pedro.

Whilst our donkeys were baiting, we repaired to the shore, a short distance beyond the village, to view the columnar basalt, which runs down to the sea in the form of a parapet; it will not however compete with the beautiful jointed specimens I have witnessed at the Giant's Causeway or Fingal's Cave at Staffa: and only serves to prove the existence of the prismatic basalt, in combination with the, comparatively, modern masses of volcanic scoriæ.

We left Fenaes d'Ajuda at three o'clock, and proceeded along the coast by a diabolical, rocky road, though a rich productive country. It is impossible to describe the effect produced to the ear, as the traveller winds his way through any of the Western Islands, by the mingled notes of the numerous species of birds that frequent in myriads every part of the land; there is something to me enchanting, in a lonely country, (particularly when the solitude is picturesque,) to listen to the shrill harmony of these feathered minstrels;

and it was our pleasant fate, to be every where delighted in this way throughout our journey.

In the Azores, the traveller certainly depends, for the interest he experiences, on external objects, viz. the beauty of climate, the productions of nature, or picturesque scenery; unaided by those captivating associations connected with classical history or legendary tradition: whereas in other countries—to the man of taste and refinement—genius, bravery or skill, may have conferred an undying interest on the most unpicturesque localities, and sanctified the meanest, and most insignificant spot. A speculative mind may, however, greatly compensate for their absence, by substituting the future for the past; by picturing to imagination the refinement of art that may yet adorn, the science that may grace, and the noble deeds that may consecrate, that splendid theatre so admirably adapted for their exhibition in this beautiful Archipelago, if a wiser policy in the government will but raise the curtain and let the performance commence.

Two leagues from Fenaes d'Ajuda, we passed through a small town called Maya—to which the village of Furnas, already described, is subject—and a league beyond to Porto Formoso, where there

is a small though exposed port, and the inhabitants are both industrious husbandmen and active fishermen. From hence we proceeded to Ribeiragrande, two leagues farther—through the village of Ribeirinha which joins it; and on account of little delays *en route*, we did not reach the town until dark.

Ribeiragrande stands on a river of the same name, almost in the centre of the N.W. coast. It is on the lowest, as well as narrowest, part of the island, being only two leagues from the city, in a parallel line with the road, from whence the land rises up on each side, into bold precipitous rocky heights and cones. It is the second largest town of the island, and may be said to contain between twelve and thirteen thousand inhabitants, including those of the two adjoining villages of Ribeirinha and Ribeirasecca, which are almost united. It is, however, gloomy and ill-built: its houses scattered almost indiscriminately over rocky uneven ground, forming narrow irregular streets on the coast. It is quite inaccessible from the sea-side, being hemmed in by reefs of rocks, that run out some distance from the shore, and bid defiance to maritime attacks, *without* the aid of an important looking fort, which stands there

with eight almost useless guns, reminding one of the presence of a whining cur beside a companion mastiff, that guards the threshold of his master's door. There is of course no port: but as to anchorage, or capabilities for such accommodations, nothing is known throughout the whole distance, along this side of the island. Notwithstanding it is watered by numerous little streams, and the land more fitted for cultivation than on the south, it is yet unexplored and unsurveyed; and I have no doubt, from my own cursory observations, many applicable plans might be suggested. The inhabitants manufacture a great deal of good common linen, as well as a coarse species of woollen cloth, which accounts both for the quantity of hemp and flax grown on this coast, and also for the flocks of sheep which we observed in greater number here than elsewhere. I again observe that mutton is a meat very seldom eaten by the natives, and sheep only bred for the benefit of the wool, which explained the miserable condition these animals were all in. The natives also make a good sort of common hat, herewith they supply all the neighbouring towns. There are four churches, the principal one, called the Estrella, is said to be very rich; and there are also two monasteries and three convents, whose

follies and crimes had just ceased by means of the Imperial fiat.

The environs of Ribeiragrande are extremely rich, wild and picturesque. They form a sort of amphitheatral valley, surrounded by a chain of hills, and constantly in a state of verdure; they are cultivated with grain, fruit, pulse of all sorts: here and there thickly strewed with vineyards and orange gardens: but much of the beauty of the immediate vicinity has, during the last three or four years, disappeared, owing to all the large trees being cut down to make orange boxes: the usual importation of the proper wood from Portugal having ceased on account of the revolution. The interior of the country abounds in partridge and rabbits, and the coast swarms with wild pigeons, which live among the rocks.

The fruits of this neighbourhood are remarkably fine, particularly the oranges and melons; the bananas however are not, at any place on this side the island, to be compared with those of the south, where they grow with remarkable luxuriance. Being of so delicate a nature, low sheltered spots, with a southern aspect, are necessary to be selected for their cultivation.

The evergreens of these islands are every where

fine and luxuriant, but particularly beautiful and vigorous, I think, in this neighbourhood. The myrtle grows so profusely, (and quite to the size and strength of a tree,) that it is made use of for tanning leather; a fact that was impressed on me, by seeing a man, who was barbarously lopping and destroying, for that purpose, some specimens so splendid, that in this country we should give a little fortune to possess them.

We proceeded to visit the hot baths of Ribeiragrande at an early hour on the following morning (10th), than which nothing could be more enchanting—the weather being subdued from the angry storm of the preceding day, and the heavens presenting one unvaried cerulean expanse, excepting over the horizon of the eastern hills, where a bright golden blaze announced the approach of the majesty of light. The baths are situated in a S.E. direction from the town, towards the interior; the road to them, though rugged, difficult, and dangerous in any other way than on foot, being beautifully picturesque and interesting. It leads through cavernous clefts, and ravines, very little better than the passage up the dry bed of a mountain stream; but, at the same time, exhibits some most striking combinations to

the eye of a lover of landscape. Through this species of scenery we wound our way, until we reached a deep valley closely girt by mountains, at the bottom of which lie the springs, with an adjoining hamlet consisting of eight or nine cottages, with accommodations a shade better than those of Furnas. There are three principal basons, one of which throws up boiling water in large quantities; whilst the other two contain only mineral mud, composed of a soft saponaceous clay, frequently tinged with blue, red and violet—formed by the action of acid vapour on the surrounding pumice tuff, and scoriæ, and in a constant state of violent ebullition, with a temperature equal to boiling point. The adjoining rock is in a complete state of calcination; split into deep fissures, through which the hot air escapes, raising the thermometer to a heat equal to that of the mud, whilst the crevices in the ground emit an abundance of hot vaporous acids, containing sulphur, hydrogen, etc. etc. At a short distance from hence is a fountain of pure cold spring water which, when a bath is required, is led by ducts into the basons of mud, where, with incredible rapidity, it attains a boiling heat, bubbling up with great violence, and becoming impregnated with all the

mineral ingredients and virtues of the mud. It is then conducted to the bathing houses—where it is tempered to any required heat, and regulated to the feelings of the invalid.

It is lamentable to see these valuable mineral springs, like those of Furnas, out of reach (it may be said) of society; although, in consequence of the vicinity of these to Ribeiragrande, they are somewhat more frequented, and are said to effect wonderful cures in a variety of cases, particularly in severe rheumatic attacks, where the sufferers had been previously led to abandon all hopes of relief.

Our time being limited, we were obliged to hasten back to the town, which we quitted after a morning repast of eggs, Indian corn, bread, and broiled pigeons. Passing through Ribeirasecca, which, as I before-mentioned, is a continuation of the town, we proceeded to Rabodepeixe. This is a neat well-built town of 5,000 inhabitants, agreeably situated on a fertile cultivated plain bordering the sea, where an immense quantity of maise and grain is raised. I observed also a large portion of land admirably adapted for a fine rich tract of pasture: large quantities of sheep were feeding on it; but it was neglected, covered with

stones, and apparently unappreciated. Our guide informed us that the inhabitants of this place were very active and industrious, and anxiously looked forward for promised prosperity under Donna Maria, whom they intended to petition for aid in erecting a pier. Such a plan I clearly saw might be effected without difficulty—nature having already made an important commencement by the favorable position of the rocks, which even now so far protect the beach that boats can get in and out at any time. With a little port convenient for the shelter of small craft, this place, from its agricultural capabilities and attractive neighbourhood, would soon rise to eminence and prosperity. The road from Rabodepeixe is excessively bad: we passed over hills of slaggy lava and tuff, as far as a large village called Fenaes da Luz, three miles distant, and beyond thence went another league to the village of Capellas, beautifully situated amongst orange groves at the base of the Morro das Capellas; it is so named on account of the numerous caves and fissures around it, the retreats of swarms of pigeons, for which this side of the island has always been celebrated.

The vicinity of Capellas, like that of Rabodepeixe, abounds in grain and pulse; besides which

it is covered with an immense variety of beautiful evergreens, vineyards, and orchards of apples and pears; the latter, however, though of a better quality than at any of the Azores, taste very inferior to an English palate; they are no where cultivated with the slightest care; all being left to nature without the assistance of graft or pruning knife.

This style of rich-looking country continues as far as Bretanha through the village of Sanct' Antonio, with a succession of houses and hamlets along the coast almost the whole distance, the high promontory called Punta da Bretanha projecting out to seaward on the right.

Our journey hence was enlivened by an immense crowd of peasantry proceeding in merry song from the distant chapel of Santa Barbara, where a juvenile couple had just been united in the solemn bands of wedlock. All were clad in their best attire, according to the curious, picturesque costume peculiar to the island, which, for the men, consists of a blue jacket, almost covered in front with buttons; a red, brown, or party-colored waistcoat, with breeches unbuttoned at the knees, shewing a pair of white drawers, which hang somewhat loosely beneath, with rude long leather

gaiters, over shoes or raw hide sandals: the very singular hat called the carapuça, is made of felt, covered with coarse blue cloth and has a rim (the under part lined with red cloth) six inches wide, terminating with a crescented gore in front, where the pointed ends of the gore are turned up and have the appearance of horns; a broad pendant lappet is attached to it behind which covers the neck and shoulders. Over this costume is worn, in cold weather, a long blue cloak, which, with the tall spike stick they usually carry, gives a most curious appearance to the general exterior of the peasantry of St. Michael's. The bride was clad in a short bright green dress, with a high stiff bodice surmounted by a quantity of lace, with a white spreading cap of flowing lace and ribbands, and large ear-rings, necklace, chains, etc. of gold —which, according to their riches or importance, always distinguish the female peasantry of the Azores.

The group, on approaching our cavalcade, stopped; when, after a courteous obeisance and with complimentary expressions in favor of our nation, two of the wedding party, with guitars, commenced an air or rather a dissonant repetition of chords, accompanied by an extemporaneous

epithalamium to which the whole group occasionally responded in bellowing chorus.

After offering our felicitations to the happy-looking couple and our good wishes to their companions, we hastened on through Bretanha and half a league beyond, round the mountain of Maffra, to the little town of Mosteiros, where we proposed sojourning for the night. Mosteiros is situated on a low coast at the western extremity of the island, seven leagues from the city, and one from the next village of Ginetes. Its position is favorable for maritime commerce. It might be rendered an important place of trade; there is a small port, defended by an old castle, with a circular bay to the southward, which with facility could be converted into an excellent harbour, nature having already half completed the work by the position of an island and a semicircular ledge of rocks that could be united and formed into a species of breakwater. The inhabitants are comparatively wealthy; they are active-minded, and seem conscious both of their local advantages and bad government;—for they say, if their town did not belong to the Azores, they should be rich and prosperous.

After recruiting, with a few eggs and roasted

yams*, we started off with fresh mules, determined to ascend the mountain of Maffra before dark, which we easily accomplished and felt amply compensated for our exertions.

Maffra is the highest peak of St. Michael's (I believe between 3 and 4000 feet); and from its summit we commanded a view that comprises the whole outline of the island, with its remarkably characteristic features. It is impossible to conceive a more unique, curious, or sublime prospect, by way of bird's eye view, than we there enjoyed. To the N.E., far as the eye could reach, lay, in apparently scattered confusion, a succession of mountains and hills, covered with wild verdure and furrowed with dark deep ravines, terminating in rich looking sequestered valleys; whilst beneath us, to the N.W., lay the highly cultivated romantic scenery around Capellas, and immediately to the east the crater of the seven cities. The whole picture possesses a beautifully wild and sombre

* The yams of St. Michael's though small are excellent: with calavansas, lupin seed and Indian corn bread, they constitute the principal food of the Azorean labourers and poor, who make them into various messes, cooked up with vinegar or oil. They eat very little meat; and when they do indulge, it is almost exclusively in pork.

aspect, the grandeur of which is heightened by the vast expanse of surrounding ocean below, over which the eye wanders to the right and meets the bold form of St. Mary's rising up from the horizon, while to the left appears the dusky outline of Terceira. Some even assert that, with a clear atmosphere, the cape of Pico may at times be seen. We could not, however, succeed in discovering it, although under the most favorable circumstances, for, as we quitted the mountains, the sun was just declining into the western horizon, nearly at the point where it must, if at all, have been observable. It is curious to remark, from this height, the distinct line of demarcation visible between the cultivated and uncultivated tracts of the island—scarcely one third of which round the shores may be ranked amongst the former; the remaining portion, towards the centre and up the heights, being covered with shrubs, underwood, luxuriant evergreens, and trees, frequented only by rabbits, a few partridges, and quails.

It was dark before we reached Mosteiros again, and we were all glad to retreat to our gloomy dormitory at an early hour.

The distance from Mosteiros to the city, by

the coast, is seven leagues, marked by the intervening villages of Ginetes, Candellaria, Feteira, and Relva. The country is not so interesting as on the opposite coast; and nothing strikes one as particularly worthy of observation, but the same richness of vegetation and luxuriance of wild evergreens that characterize the rest of the island. Near Feteira, a short distance inland, is a mineral spring of hot water, which may and most probably will at some future day be more valued than at present. We therefore determined to cross the country in the morning, by the crater of the seven cities.

The west end of St. Michael's terminates in a chain of lofty peaks and volcanic mountainous masses; and before I record our excursion to the lake of the seven cities, I will give a short statement of the various subterranean movements that have been noticed since the first discovery of the island. Every feature of St. Michael's exhibits traces of the agency of fire: the roads and paths are over cinders, pumice, or calcined stones of some sort. The towering walls of the quintas are formed of volcanic stones, and the houses are all built of lava. Yet, from the decomposing qualities of the surrounding atmosphere, so rich and

fertile is the generality of the soil, that, with a little industry, it might be rendered the most productive spot in the globe. The volcanic matter itself possesses a fertilizing quality. This I was at first quite ignorant of; but a gentleman told me it is, with the evaporations, carried up into the atmosphere in the form of dust, and from thence diffused over the land, where it mingles with the soil, most beneficially imparting thereto its peculiar virtues.

The general aspect of the island, from any of the dominating heights of Maffra, Pico do Fogo, or Pico de Varra, is, as I have already shewn, in describing the first-mentioned place, alike curious, sublime, and picturesque: its diversity of hills, valleys, rocks, and ravines, together with the surrounding sea, altogether presenting, at several attractive points, a superabundance of pictorial beauty. The whole island has experienced many physical changes, and assumed a variety of appearances since it was first known, owing to the volcanic eruptions and violent earthquakes that have so frequently assailed and torn it to pieces. The following are the most remarkable occurrences I have been able to collect from the authentic archives of the island.

The first took place between the period of Cabral's first and second visits in 1444 and 1445, and proved the most extensive and awful on record; it destroyed, as has been before stated, that immense tract of rich country upon which the navigator had fixed his eye for future colonization, by projecting a whole mountainous mass over its surface, and opening an enormous crater, from whence rivers of molten lava were ejected, mingled with torrents of water, which collected in the valley, and now form that beautiful expanse of lake called Alagoa das sete Cidades.

The next convulsion was the eruption, earthquake, and landslip which, in 1522, totally distroyed Villa Franca. In 1563, Pico Sapateiro sent forth a tremendous current of lava which ran down to the sea by Ribeirasecca. In 1638, an island of great magnitude was thrown up fifteen leagues to the west of St. Michael's which unalterably remained many years, and then suddenly disappeared and sank to an unfathomable depth. In 1652 the hills N.E. of Rosto de Cão, called Pico de Joa Romos, and Pico da Paya, vomited forth their fiery contents and totally overwhelmed therewith the surrounding fertile lands. In 1691 earthquakes prevailed throughout the island, accompanied with

the uplifting of numerous little islets round the shores. In the year 1719, again, fifteen leagues to the westward of the coast, a large circular island nine miles in diameter was thrown up, which disappeared in the year 1723, sinking into a depth of 70 fathoms.—What a tremendous submarine convulsion must have occurred to cause such a phenomenon! In 1720 awful earthquakes devastated numerous parts of the island; and again more fearfully in 1755, when whole villages were lost, with their inhabitants. On the 11th of August, 1810, another tremendous earthquake occurred, which was violent beyond conception, producing a rocking of the whole island at intervals, that alarmed the entire population, and scattered an immense number of their tenements on the earth. It was preceded by flames (but no eruption) issuing from an orifice at the N.E. end of the island, and a small eruption, from the peak of Genetes at the S.W. extremity. At the commencement of the year 1811, about half a league from the coast, opposite Ponta da Ferraria, a tremendous eruption of smoke, cinders, and columns of hot water rose to the height of 240 feet out of the sea, accompanied, at various points, with violent and reiterated shocks of earthquake, occasioning con-

siderable devastation. Again, on the 13th of June in the same year, and at the same place, occurred the volcanic eruption and formation of the island of Sabrina—which took its name from his Majesty's ship so called, at that period cruizing in the neighbourhood, and whose crew watched the progress. It commenced by the ejection of enormous columns of water, smoke, and stones, accompanied by submarine explosions. On the 18th the summit of the crater appeared above water; on the 20th it attained the height of 180 feet; and on the 4th of July, when the eruption ceased, the island, thus formed, was encreased to the height of three hundred feet and a quarter of a league in circumference; the little crater of which contained a bason of boiling water. All, however, totally disappeared about the middle of October, and sank to an unfathomable depth.

Since that period St. Michael's has only occasionally experienced slight shocks of earthquake, which, as is generally presumed, are mitigated by the subterranean steam and hot vapours of the springs (particularly those of Furnás and Ribeira-grande) finding an easy escape. These places act as a vent for the rarified air that is engendered by subterranean heat.

Early in the morning Antonio and his train of

long-eared chargers were in punctual attendance, and we trotted off towards the heights that surround the Val das sete Cidades, which we soon reached, being only between two and three miles distant—though in parts up a steep acclivity. On attaining the summit, a little more than 2,000 feet above the level of the sea, we enjoyed at once the comprehensive view of the whole tract constituting the celebrated valley, besides an exterior prospect, similar to that described from the summit of Maffra. The valley is a bason surrounded by mountains nearly fifteen miles in circumference, and forming the lips of a stupendous crater, whose interior sides are composed of pumice, and slope down, at an angle of 45 degrees to the bottom—where is formed a rich valley nine miles in circumference, with (in the centre) two beautiful unruffled lakes occupying one third of the whole superficies, and separated only by a narrow isthmus; the one is called Lagoa grande the other Lagoa azul—close to which, and delightfully situated on the borders, are the few white cottages called the Seven Cities. The reader will naturally ask the origin of this appellation. I know not; no one in the island knew, nor is it any where recorded.

The interior sides of this crater are deeply fur-

rowed by rocky ravines, from the summit to the lakes, many of them presenting picturesque cascades and most romantic scenery. The higher portion of the slopes are covered with luxuriant ferns and underwood, together with patches of wild myrtle, box, arbutus and other evergreens—below which the descent is clothed with groves of orange and lemon trees; and at the bottom, round the borders of the lakes, lies a cultivated plain that produces the most fertile crops of grain, pulse and grapes, with excellent hemp and flax.

I was infinitely more gratified with the really beautiful scenery of this celebrated valley than with that of Furnas, when I had the misfortune to damp the enthusiasm of my Brazilian friend. There is, in my opinion, no comparison between the two; and were it not for the extremely curious springs at the latter, the appearance of the country would not repay the trouble of the journey.

After exploring the descent, we proceeded to the famous village, where we breakfasted, and emerged from the valley by the east side, afterwards descending to the shore near Relva, and from thence to the city; where we arrived at five o'clock, not a little happy to be relieved from the monotony of asinine locomotion, though most amply remunerated for any fatigue we felt.

At present the commerce of St. Michael's (which might be rendered so profitable,) is confined to the exportation of oranges, lemons, grain, and pulse; business is, however, more actively pursued here than at any other of the islands; and St. Michael's may with justice be esteemed the principal mart of the Azores, producing even in its present state, according to the following proportions, a clear revenue to the government of 200,000 crowns, which is annually remitted to the mother country, and amounts to one half of the whole produced by this Archipelago.

RECEIPTS.	CROWNS.
Tithes	120,000
Customs	50,000
Duty on the sale or transfer of property 10 per cent	14,820
Duty on salt	9,000
Ditto on fresh meat	5,000
Duty of ten per cent on house rents	9,000
Small tax on provisions for the support of public instruction	2,000
Duty on soap and tobacco	56,480
	266,300
	62,260
	204,040

EXPENDITURE.	CROWNS.
For divine worship and the church in general	24,000
Public instruction	560
Governor's salary and the support of troops	34,000
Magistrature	1,900
Support of public offices and the salaries of custom house officers	1,800
	62,260

If, under such an accumulation of disadvantages, with scarcely a third of its soil in cultivation, St. Michael's will yield this clear profit to the government,—what, in the name of conscience, might it not do when, free and unfettered, it could display its gigantic powers and develop its abundant resources?—when, with the existence of the foremen-tioned proposed ports, it might command the commerce of the opposite shores of the Atlantic? Unhappy Lusitania! when will you rouse from the sleep of ages, and profit by the lavish bounties of a beneficent Providence!

On the 12th the city was plunged into a general scene of tribulation by the death of young Count Calharis, the eldest son of the Marquis (now Duke) of Palmella. All festivities ceased; the Admiral's ball was postponed; and the promised day of rejoicing became one of sorrow; for, independent of the generality of the highest and most respectable of the Portuguese nobility, then at the island, being connected either by consanguinity or marriage to the Duke or his amiable Duchess, there was a general feeling of sympathy, on the part of English as well as Portuguese, in favor of the sorrowing father—who has every where made himself respected, beloved, and admired, by the many excellent qualities that distinguish both his head and heart.

In our passage from Belle Isle I had the gratification of enjoying much of the Duke's society, which enabled me to appreciate his private as well as public worth: mild, benevolent and intelligent, with a well-informed mind and polished, conciliating manners, his companionship is inestimable; as a politician, his talents need not my praise; although I occasionally discovered the inimical feelings of a violent party, who suspected his sincerity in the constitutional cause because he did not blindly espouse the principle of transferring a country, at one stroke, from the thraldom of feudalism to the extreme of constitutional liberty. The Duke desires the regeneration of his country as sincerely as the wildest enthusiast of the liberal party; but experience, good sense, and a perfect knowledge of mankind, impress on him the conviction, that the march of improvement and civilization is only gradual; that liberty, to become solid and lasting, can only keep pace with the progress of reason. May his talents have their influence in the present state of affairs, and hapless Portugal will assuredly feel the benefit. But the task will neither be easy nor enviable to the man who holds the helm at the present crisis; and it behoves all true Portuguese, all sincere patriots, to stand forward, and assist

with their whole energies those men who, in responsible offices of the government, will virtuously exercise their talents in striving for the public weal, and not, at its sacrifice, pursue individual aggrandizement.

Ponte Delgada was now filled to overflowing; all belonging to the expedition were here concentrated in preparation for departure; and the town exhibited the activity, noise and confusion of our own naval ports during war; in which confusion, our countrymen openly took the lead, and kept up their national celebrity in every way wherein mischief, folly, or fun could be pursued—such as excursions in riotous parties into the country on donkeys; turning the house out at the window at hotels, (where midnight revelries occasionally terminated in strife and enmity;) or pushing nocturnal adventures within the precincts of conventual walls, etc. All, however, terminated on the 22nd of June; and I saw St. Michael's for the last time, under the influence of a most interesting ceremony, which ought long to live in the memory of every liberal-minded Portuguese, and will, I trust, in after-times be reverted to with feelings of satisfaction and delight as the first step towards the attainment of consti-

tutional freedom, and emancipation from a cruel despotism.

Scarcely had daylight broke, ere the drum beat to arms, and called every military man to the review ground, where, in the midst of the assembled crowd, high mass was solemnly performed by the Emperor's chaplain, and a general prayer offered up for the success of our cause, which terminated with a patriotic address from the Emperor himself; who, after making an enthusiastic appeal to the bravery, devotion and patriotism of his countrymen, marched at the head of the whole body to the quay, where they embarked from three different points with the most perfect order and regularity under the directions of the Vice-Admiral, who attended in person. It is impossible to give a sufficiently faithful description of this imposing spectacle—which exhibited, in one compact circular mass, this little band of patriots (constituting the liberating army,) silently and solemnly uniting in the holy ceremony to implore aid from a protecting Providence. There is something truly affecting, I think, in witnessing men in any undertaking influenced by a sincere, unpretending sense of religion; it gives a dignity and consistency to the act, which invariably more

or less stimulates the mind to virtuous exertion.

The sun rose brightly, seeming to shed his golden beams over the scene, as if in auspicious testimony of the day; and although at so early an hour of morning, a concourse of many thousands of both sexes, and all classes, attended to mingle their prayers and sympathies with the friends and relations thus about to leave them, perhaps for ever.

Though irrelevant to the intention of this work, I cannot help observing that our sojourn at the Azores—and particularly during this period at Ponte Delgada—was marked by a series of political as well as private feuds and factions, being the usual character of all such operations as the great mass was now engaged in: neither was the squadron without its discontents, schisms, partisanship, and intrigues, as must unavoidably be the case in the first modelling of all services, which like this, being at first considered illegal, was embodied *en cachette*, and thus subject to a *mélange* of all sorts of characters, whose *soi-disant* merits, pretensions, or capabilities, in any way, the then political circumstances prevented being sufficiently scrutinised, and which, of course, subsequently developed themselves in

various ways so prejudicial to the service, that Admiral Sartorius was imperatively called upon but too frequently to act in such a way as the consideration of his own character, as well as the interests of the service, required. Hence, then, through the malice, jealousy and bad principle of many of his officers (whom he had offended by the conscientious discharge of his duty,) he became an object of calumny in every way that could reach the ear and shake the confidence of Don Pedro and the government, which, unfortunately for the service, had the desired effect, and produced a line of conduct from the Portuguese consequent on such impressions. At the same time, no commander-in-chief could have given stronger proofs of fidelity to the cause he espoused, or evinced a stronger inclination to gain the affections of all his officers, as well as to serve their individual interest in every *reasonable* way he could, compatibly with the good of the service. But a strict sense of duty he owed to the parties who had entrusted him with command, and to whom he had sworn allegiance, rendered it impossible for him to injure the interest of the service by yielding to the extravagant expec-

tations, unreasonable demands, and frequently really ludicrous requests, that were framed by the various officers who embarked in the cause: hence, then, all the base intrigue, censure, and unpopularity he became exposed to—of which I too shared a large portion, and was rendered an object of suspicion in the eyes of Don Pedro and his ministers; for this, however, I only blame my own countrymen, whose degrading calumnies alone occasioned it. I was a perfect stranger to the Portuguese; and although as enthusiastic, sincere, and disinterested a partisan in favor of their cause as any individual of that expedition, I might have been quite the reverse. They could only be guided by general report; therefore it is not surprising their dependence in me should be shaken, if the exertions of individuals were made to prove me inimical to the interests of Don Pedro and Donna Maria. I will make a few further remarks on this subject, in an Appendix, for the purpose of explaining away the vulgar, malignant insinuations of Captain Peter Mins, in his mendacious compilation, so laughably designated, "A Narrative of the Naval Part of the expedition under Don Pedro."

CHAPTER III.

THE DEPARTMENT OF ANGRA,

INCLUDING THE ISLANDS OF TERCEIRA, ST. GEORGE AND GRACIOSA.

THE ISLAND OF TERCEIRA.

As I had first seen St. Michael's, so I now visited Terceira, under circumstances that never fail to make first impressions more flattering and agreeable—namely, under the influence of festivity. On the 3rd of March, having the Emperor and suite on board the Rainha de Portugal, we arrived off the town of Angra, where we displayed the imperial standard to announce the approach of Don Pedro, who now came to assume the Regency in the name of his daughter. After exchanging salutes with the batteries, the acting Regency, accompanied by the other military authorities, came on board, and in due form surrendered their powers to His Imperial Majesty, who im-

mediately proceeded on shore, where he was received upon landing by all the principal officers, and conducted with a band of music to the palace, the streets leading to which were decorated with drapery, triumphal arches, alleys of evergreens, and colonnades of orange boughs. But the reception was not here, as at St. Michael's, marked by loyal warmth and enthusiasm; for the hearts of the Terceirans, at least of the major portion, were not with the constitutional cause. They have always been remarkable, at least the higher classes, for their bigoted attachment to a monarchical despotism, and the lower orders for a crouching and passive submission to the system of feudalism; consequently, all looked now with jealousy on the coming change, and in secret lent their influence to that of priestcraft, to oppose its progress.

The island of Terceira was discovered on the 23rd of April 1445, by some Portuguese navigators returning to Europe from Cape Verd, and received its present appellation in consequence of being the third in the order of discovery. It was first colonized by a Fleming, called Jacome de Bruges, who resided at the court of Lisbon, and received his commission for that purpose from the

Infante Don Henrico shortly after the discovery of the island, when he took out many Portuguese families from the Tagus as settlers.

Terceira is nearly round, and situated about twenty-four leagues N.W. of St. Michael's, twenty leagues N.E. of Fayal, and two hundred and fifty west of the coast of Portugal. It is twenty miles in length; its westernmost point, Punta de la Serreta, being in 27°. 22′ west longitude and 38°. 46′. north latitude, and its easternmost point, Malmeranda, in 27°. 2′. west longitude and 38°. 44′. north latitude, with a medial breadth of thirteen miles. Being bordered all round by bold, mural, precipitous rocks, it is strongly fortified by nature against external attack, and might be rendered impregnable at a trifling expense, there being very few points accessible to an invading enemy; hence it has ever been the strong hold of the Azoreans; and, in consequence, the most active theatre of the island wars. The inhabitants distinguished themselves by gallantly opposing the usurpation of Philip II. in the year 1580, when they repulsed his fleets and armies from their shores; but were at length, in 1583, obliged to succumb to a force composed of the *élite* of the Spanish army and navy, and consisting of ninety sail, under the command of

the famous Alvaro de Bazan, Marquis of Santa Cruz, who, as before noticed, after subduing the Azorean fleet under Count Vimiesa, disembarked on the 27th July, and took possession of the island; an event followed by the submission of the whole Archipelago. These proud, tyrannical oppressors, in revenge for the obstinate opposition they had met, visited the inhabitants with every speciesof ignominy during the first years of their possession; and in 1591 erected a strong fortress to command the bay, and to serve as a strong-hold or place of retreat in case of defection; which in honor to their sovereign was called San Felipe. Whilst on the hill they built a castle to command the capital. Feeling at length securely in possession, the governors relaxed these rigorous measures; and to gain affection and willing obedience adorned the town with numerous churches and monasteries, besides other public buildings, accompanying this with other acts of generosity, well calculated to effect the end proposed. But a day of retribution came; and in the year 1640, the Terceirans were the first to declare in favor of the Portuguese restoration, by proclaiming John IV., and promptly laying siege to the Spaniards in the castle, which they closely invested for eleven months at the

expiration of which period the Spanish dons were obliged to surrender by capitulation, and the island again became subject to the Portuguese crown. For this act of fidelity and bravery the city of Angra was formally vested by the government with the complimentary distinction of *sempre leal cidade*, and the castle received the appellation of San João Batista, after the patron saint of the church.

The Terceirans, however, did not demonstrate similar energy and zeal in favor of constitutional freedom when, in the year 1821, the friends of reason and justice in St. Michael's raised the standard of liberty; on the contrary, they put down a feeble attempt that was made in the cause, and then more firmly consolidated the power of absolutism; and in the celebrated year of 1828, when the constitutionalists clearly disavowed the pretensions of the tyrant Don Miguel, it was only by dint of the bravery of the 5th Caçadores, a Portuguese regiment of the line, that they maintained their authority in this island; since which the position has been kept, and Terceira has become a rallying point of the constitutionalists—from whence, under the brave patriotic Villa Flor, they in 1831 sallied forth, subjugated the whole Archipelago, and finally, having placed

their legitimate Queen on the throne of Portugal, gained for themselves a conspicuous rank in Portuguese history.

The island of Terceira contains a population of 40,000 souls, with three towns and fifteen villages, of which Angra is the capital, as also of the meridional department of the Archipelago. Angra is situate in latitude 38°. 45′. north, and 27°. 6′. west, most picturesquely, at the bottom of a deeply indented bay or creek, hence its name* ; defended on the south by the fortress of Mount Brazil, and on the north by St. Sebastian, distant from each other about three quarters of a mile. Its appearance, from the centre of the bay, constitutes one of the most interesting natural panoramas an enthusiastic admirer could wish to contemplate ; and I must confess the pleasure I experienced the day of our arrival, on being rowed from the ship to the shore, surpassed any thing of the kind I had felt for many years before. The town, composed of sparkling white houses and rising gradually from the sea, is ornamented with churches and convents in amphitheatral form, and surmounted by the picturesque ruins of the Spanish castle and by the elevated heights above,

* Angra, a creek.

which crown the whole; this delightful *ensemble* is encircled by a neighbourhood of quintas, orange gardens and vineyards, gently sloping down on every side; but remarkably so on the south, where the termination displays a splendid and fertile country, callled Terra Cha, which is unquestionably the richest part of the island and occupied by the country houses and rich possessions of its principal nobility and morgados.

Our arrival was not viewed by the inhabitants of this place with the most propitious feelings; for, independent of the inimical sentiments promulgated by the Corcundos, a general anti-English sensation was caused by the simultaneous arrival of the corps of marines attached to our squadron, which, from its then disorganized undisciplined condition, was under no controul, and almost under the influence of every vice. Very few had ever been soldiers; the greater part consisted indeed of the refuse of prisons or the outcasts of parishes; without respect to their superiors, or a feeling of fellowship for each other; they committed, on landing, every species of extravagance at their drunken revels, calling forth, in several instances, the provocation of the natives, and on the first night leading to a most atrocious assassination of

one of the men. However, through a wise exertion of the influence of Marquis Palmella, quarters were provided for the corps in a retired part of the country, at Praya, unconnected with the Portuguese soldiery, whither they were immediately dispatched to be disciplined and drilled.

How different the state of society here to that we had experienced at St. Michael's! such a schism existed on account of the political squabbles of Malhados and Corcundos, that scarcely any female society was accessible, nor were there festivities of any sort in which they took part. Our *réunions* were, generally, in an evening at the palace, confined to officers who came to pay their respects to the Emperor; and these assemblies were only numerous for want of other places and means of social amusement. The present palace was originally built by the Spanish jesuits, who were expelled all the islands under the celebrated Pombal; and in the year 1766, when the government of the Azores was put into the hands of a delegate from the King, with the title of Captain General of the islands, Angra was made the seat of government, and the jesuitical fabric converted into a civil palace, which character it has since continued to preserve. The inhabitants of Ter-

ceira, the men particularly, are generally speaking, strong and well formed; and the women more pleasing to the eye than those of St. Michael's. The men of the lower class scarcely ever wear stockings or shoes; and like the lazzaroni at Naples, lie about the public places, either sleeping or smoking, all the day long.

I could not help observing how very inferior their condition was to that of the inhabitants of St. Michael's; how much more poverty and dependence obtained amongst the lower orders; how few proofs of industry in the useful arts of life were any where exhibited! and whenever I referred to an inhabitant for explanation, the answer of course varied according to the politics of the person. If a Malhado, it was "the tyranny of the government and the oppression of the church;" if a Corcundo, "the system they had was good; they were accustomed to the existing state of things; and the lower orders were content, requiring no change."

The town of Angra, independent of its splendid situation, possesses merits and advantages within itself which better times may turn to fair account. Its streets are regular, being all at right angles; extremely wide, with good causeways and strong

well-built houses, generally of three stories—which, though unfinished and possessing a gloomy aspect, (through the common use of the heavy Moorish window,) might with slight change, be fashioned to the rules of modern taste, and the town thus made to vie with any of the most picturesque cities of Europe. My first impressions, it is true, were unfavourable; for its streets are infamously paved, and, like the inhabitants, excessively filthy—notwithstanding the possession of numerous public fountains in the town, conveying abundant supplies of water every where. In proof of their personal neglect, I cannot forbear mentioning that, walking one day with a Portuguese resident and uncautiously forcing my way through a congregation of townspeople in the square, he observed: "You must take care how you come in contact with the inhabitants of this island!" which hint was no sooner given than I commenced rubbing down my coat sleeves and shaking my elbows, to disengage any new acquaintance, as I concluded was the object of the intimation; but, conceive my horror, when he continued to state that almost every other person I met was afflicted with the Caledonian cremona, and that, from habitual filth, cutaneous diseases

were most common. For several days after, I felt as if I were about to be numbered with the invalids; and from that period augmented my courtesy in the streets to all ranks and conditions, by retreating from the causeway altogether, immediately any one approached.

The town is adorned with numerous churches, monasteries and convents; whose turrets, steeples, galleries, etc., give to its distant appearance peculiar and characteristic beauty, and have acquired for it the appellation of the City of Churches. We now saw all its monasteries, excepting one, converted into military barracks; all the different regiments of the expedition being as yet united in this island. The convents, however, remained untouched; I suppose for the amusement and accommodation of the numerous officers who, by yielding to the amatory influence, neglected that political partisanship which so distinguished our affairs at Angra.

It is impossible to describe the notoriously shameless manner in which conventual infamy is practiced in the island of Terceira; I had been sufficiently shocked at what I saw and heard at St. Michael's; but was now quite horrified at the abandoned licentiousness of the inmates of these

abodes of crime, which continually forced itself on my attention, through either ocular demonstration, or narration. The principal convent, (I believe the Concesçāo,) which is picturesquely situated on a terrace overlooking the splendid country of Terra Cha, and commanding a distant view of the island of St. George and the snow-capped peak of Pico, became, on account of its local attractiveness externally, and superior fascinations internally, the most fashionable resort of faithless husbands or amorous celebates; and it was a common scene, *en passant*, to witness the nuns in amorous communication with their swains underneath the grated window, where concessions were made, agreements entered into, and hours appointed for admission to their cells. It was ludicrous to see how completely the grass was worn away under every window of this convent by the frequency of these communications: in fact, the nuns are nothing better than cloistered Cyprians; and the monks and clergy have lived in such unrestrained licentiousness that we cannot feel surprised at the degraded, debased condition of the people. The liberty and power of this class of men is so great that, when abused, it must inevitably be attended with public dese-

cration of their character; and such an unhallowed *exposé* produces more injury to the sacred cause of religion than all the powers of a Paine or Voltaire. The public day-light interviews with the nuns at the *grille* were made agreeable to new acquaintance, and distinguished visitors, by coquettish conversation, entertainments of cake and wine, or singing—which was oftentimes extremely good, accompanied by a performance on the viola. Their voices were in general peculiarly sweet; and the fair *dévotés*, I observed sometimes squatted cross-legged on the ground, during the exhibition—a remnant of Moorish customs which gave rather a romantic character to the group as they chaunted the beautiful little Portuguese modinhos.

The following accounts of an incident, contemporary with our expedition, may illustrate in some measure the meretricious propensities of all classes and every branch of the conventual sisterhood. A young Portuguese officer, who, from a miserable state of pecuniary depletion, (though not worse than his comrades in this particular—for all were without family resources, and on most trifling government pay,) was incapable of renewing his tattered uniform, applied for council to his friend the major of the regiment, who at once replied:

"Oh! bah, my young friend! I'll furnish you with a plan that will work miracles; go to the convent of ——, ogle and sigh with the lady abbess (who is still tender and vain though nearly thrice your age) affect impassioned love for two or three days, after which she will take fire at your protestations, admit you to her embraces, and load you with riches." Suffice it to say, the advice was no sooner urged than taken, and my young friend ever after became the most dandified beau of the regiment, and (being a handsome youth) the successful admirer of many other faithless dames in the town.

Though no sportsman, I one day accompanied a friend—who, with his gun, was determined to wander a few miles into the interior, more to view the country than in pursuit of game. We crossed directly over towards the centre through a wild, rich, romantic, country, and about six miles to the N.W. of the town; stopped to visit the caldeira or furnas of Euxofre. It lies in a deep valley, and is very much like the vapour bason at the caldeira of Ribeiragrande: the vapour issues from between fissures, out of a mass of saponaceous clay, evidently formed by the action of sulphuric acid on the surrounding stratum of decomposed lava, and will raise the thermometer

to boiling point. Every thing around wears here, as elsewhere, the aspect of volcanic influence: the stones in the immediate neighbourhood are all calcined: every thing smells of sulphur: and the conviction, that the subterranean fire cannot be far distant, is strongly impressed on the mind of whoever visits this place. Mineral springs and hot vapours, similar to these, are to be seen in other parts of the island; but remain unnoticed by the inhabitants. From the caldeira we penetrated to the heights, through almost impervious fastnesses, abounding with enormous caverns, which as I afterwards learnt was the case all over the country. Most of them remain unexplored; they are made places of retreat for outlaws and criminals; and particularly, during the late affairs, for those who have openly rebelled against the constitutional cause, and there established hiding-places from whence to sally forth and commit acts of rapacity and murder against the Malhados, as opportunity offered.

The general face of the island is mountainous towards the centre, with gentle slopes and declivities on the south side, and abrupt rocky descents on the N.W., at which point the coast is highest,—namely, near those vertical heights called the

rocks of Penereiro and Queimado. Only a narrow belt round the shore (being little more than one fourth of it) is in cultivation, although it is quite as fertile and luxuriant as St. Michael's. The heights we found covered with underwood and impenetrable tracts of briars, as well as evergreen shrubs of almost arborescent growth, such as myrtle, juniper and box, with stunted cedars; lower down in place were woods of pine and faya. The highest part of the island is the mountainous ridge, which extends east and west, called the chain of Bagacina and Serretta, running down to the sea, and terminating at a village and point called St. George Serretta, being the western extremity of Terceira. This island is more celebrated for game than any of the rest, and abounds in rabbits, quails, woodcocks and partridge—none of which however we saw; excepting myriads of the first, as well as a superabundance of pigeons constantly on the wing. The country towards the inhabited parts appeared every where well stocked with cattle of a breed superior to that of St. Michael's, and the pasture on the heights was cropped only by miserable looking sheep—which, as in all the Azores, were merely bred for the sake of the wool.

Whilst taking refreshment at the rude cottage of a farmer, we were amused by witnessing the novel mode of making butter adopted in Terceira. A quantity of cream is put into a calabash, and shaken by women who, whilst walking and chattering, keep the calabash in a constant rotatory movement until the butter forms, when, as from the churn, it is separated, and immediately mixed with salt; and I really think I never tasted sweeter in my own country; attributable to the superior pasture of Terceira, which, although quite left to the efforts of nature, is extremely fertile and rich.

The entire surface of Terceira bears the stamp of volcanic formation: many of the enormous masses composing the heights and precipices appear (such is their positively calcined condition), to have been recently under the influence of fire. Eminences composed entirely of soft pumice and tuff seem ready to crumble away, and sink to the level of the surrounding soil, with the first heavy rains. These *écroulemens de terre*, or landslips, do in fact take place, and in earlier ages have occurred to a serious extent: burying in their fall villages, together with the cattle on the plain beneath.* Many trees that have in these operations been enveloped in the soil, are now cited and

shewn with philosophic wisdom, as proofs and remnants of the Noachian deluge: one specimen of them was exhibited to me on this excursion, near the heights of Bagacina: it was the trunk of a large tree, projecting out of the lower stratum of a congeries of volcanic soil—but evidently to be identified with the existing productions of the island, and still retaining all its ligneous properties. Pumice exists to a great extent throughout Terceira, but of a coarser species than that of St. Michael's. I have no doubt, however, that it might be rendered serviceable in the arts, and thus become a source of commercial profit to the island.

To the draftsman and painter, Terceira offers the widest field for the display of genius: blended with the rude forms of rocky precipices and caverns, and the austere aspect of volcanic regions, there exist at innumerable points, sometimes isolated, sometimes in conjunction with a more expansive scene, the most delicious pictures of natural beauty, and loveliness, the eye can desire to witness.

With respect to the state of cultivation in Terceira, nothing can be worse or more lamentable. Industry is at its lowest ebb, in all agricultural

as well as manufacturing pursuits. As yet a bountiful Providence, an incomparable climate, and a rich soil, produce an annual abundance of yams, grain, pulse of all sorts, and peculiarly delicious vegetables, with a great variety of fruits,—though all the latter are left to the spontaneous efforts of nature, with the exception of the orange and lemon, which, of late years, have been planted, and more attended to in consequence of their easy profits: now, about one fifth of the whole exported from the Azores, is taken from hence.—After an agreeable ramble over the country, we returned late in the evening, not however without some little cause for alarm, having been evidently reconnoitred and followed by several suspicious looking men, (perhaps renegado inhabitants of the mountain caverns) as far as the outskirts of the town, where they retraced their steps, and *spared* us, we suppose, only in consequence of our having side arms.

One day, after a review of troops, I accompanied the Admiral and several engineer officers, to examine the fortifications of Mount Brazil. This is a peninsular promontory, forming the S.W. boundary of the Bay of Angra, and the N.E. limit of the Bay of Fayal, on the other side.

It is an object of curiosity, in a geological point of view, and has evidently been thrown up by volcanic eruption, subsequent to the upheaving of the whole island from the sea. It is surrounded by vertical inaccessible rocks, with four peaks rising up from the centre, the highest of which is 290 feet from the level of the sea, called the Pico do Facho, and with a telegraph on the summit. The small circular valley, between these peaks, (named by the natives the Caldeira, and evidently the crater of an extinct volcano), being so sheltered and enclosed, with a fine rich soil, is admirably adapted for horticultural cultivation, and might, with very little labour, be rendered a beautiful luxuriant garden. The whole peninsula is about a league in circumference, connected on the north side by an isthmus 1500 feet in breadth, which is defended by walled fortifications, in front of the forementioned castle of San João Baptista. This peninsula is well calculated for a military station, there being plenty of water, and excellent soil, either for pasturage or arable purposes. A battery is on the eastern point, called San Antonio—which, with the opposite one of St. Sebastian, defends the Bay of Angra; and there is also one on the west side called St. Diego, defending that

of Fanal. By the Portuguese this position is considered capable of being rendered impregnable, which however I am inclined to doubt; for if I am not greatly mistaken, the heights above the town are within mortar distance, which would render the most labored fortifications nugatory: nevertheless the *island*, if properly defended and fortified with common care in its few accessible points, might easily bid defiance to maritime aggression.

As a port, Angra can boast of few advantages; for although completely sheltered from all winds from north to S.W., it is open and exposed to the remaining points; and vessels, particularly of large tonnage, are in the bad weather months necessarily obliged to anchor in the mouth of the bay abreast of St. Antonio, in twenty-eight or thirty fathoms, in order that they may be in readiness to start in case of the wind setting from thence. The winter storms, extremely violent from the southward or S.E., cause on an average an annual loss of five or six of the small traders that frequent Angra.* The water of the bay is much too

* These traders ought to be supplied with ground tackling, considerably heavier than what is usually allowed for their tonnage; for when once in the bight, they can only depend on their

deep, I think, even to render the formation of secure harbours feasible, excepting for small vessels—which might be effected by continuing the pier and breakwater already commenced, though on a much more formidable scale, at the little port Pipas under the Castle of St. Sebastian, and afterwards excavating a dock within, which is practicable almost to any extent, the stratum being of such friable materials. This plan would certainly secure a safe harbour, for such vessels as at present carry on the trade of Terceira, or indeed much larger, if the works were prosecuted on a larger scale. Another plan might be adopted by cutting a passage through the isthmus, connecting the two bays, and throwing a breakwater across that of Fanal, thus converting it into a safe bason for the *largest* ships; but I fear such a project is too gigantic to be put into execution, until many years of prosperity shall have qualified Angra for the undertaking. This is an admirable place for ships to recruit their water in, not only

anchors and cables for the safety of their vessels, and perhaps the lives of the crews—death and destruction staring them in the face, in case of parting. One or two cases occurred, to which I was eye-witness, and which would indubitably have been avoided by heavier chains and anchors.

on account of the excellent quality and quantity, but for the facility with which it is obtained, being led from the fountains down to a good commodious mole, where boats may fill without removing their casks.

The navigation into the bay is perfectly easy and free from any invisible danger: the only objects to guard against, are the small islands called the Cabras or Goats; and the rocks called the Friars—both of which are bold all round. The former are about a mile from the main-land, and two and a half miles east from St. Sebastian's Point: and the latter two miles S.E. from the Cabras, standing high out of the water... A strong current frequently runs to the eastward, on this coast; and with a westerly or S.W. wind, a heavy swell sets violently into the bay round Mount Brazil;—both of these the navigator will of course duly appreciate as circumstances require. The approach to Angra, is easily recognized by the character of Mount Brazil, which appears in the form of an inverted bowl with a crooked hummock, to the left, when bearing N.W. by N.; and the best anchorage for large ships, is abreast of the St. Antonio battery, in thirty fathoms, with St. Sebastian Point bearing about N. by W. half W.

In the middle of April 1832, on my return with the Admiral from the blockade of Madeira in H.M.F.M. brig Villa Flor, I had an opportunity of viewing the northern and eastern coast of the island. We made land near Villa Nova, a considerable village, or rather small town, situated on a rocky shore looking to the north, and about eight leagues from Angra: it is populous; and, from its situation, might, under other circumstances, become a flourishing place. The men are principally occupied in fishing, and almost every poor man has a little boat. The neighbourhood abounds in the urzella plant (of which more hereafter); and all the tribes of Erica, I was told, were pre-eminently flourishing. From this place we ran along the rugged, rocky-looking black lava coast—passing the villages of Lages and Fontainhas; and disembarked at Praya, with the intention of proceeding by land to the city.

The town of Praya, though not very large, contains, besides its churches, two monasteries and two convents, with a population of about three thousand souls; and is picturesquely situated in the centre of a beautiful sandy deep-indented bay, defended by nature at its extremities with rugged rocks, and an inaccessible coast. The forts of San

Catherina, and Spirito Santo, that now crown these rocks for the protection of the bay, if properly strengthened and repaired, would bid defiance to the approach of vessels, or to attempted disembarkations. I have already described the signal defeat gained, even in their present condition, over a colossal Miguelite foe, which has for ever immortalized the place as well as the troops in action.

Nothing can be more dreary, or look more inhospitable from the sea, than the whole of this line of coast. It is bordered by almost perpendicular rugged precipices of black lava, which, from its crumbling nature, prevents the possibility of these heights being ascended with any degree of safety. Besides the small anchorage of Biscoitos, Praya and Angra, there is scarcely any other approachable point. Between Praya and Angra however there are the little coves or roadsteads for small vessels, called Porto Martin, San Sebastian, Salga and Porto Judeo; but one six-pounder would suffice to defend each. The anchorage of Praya bay, is extremely rocky though commodious, and being completely exposed to all winds to the eastward of north or south, is consequently very unsafe in the bad weather months.

Praya is not very healthy, in consequence of a

species of miasma that prevails, and is generated by a tract of low swampy land in the neighbourhood—which however might with the greatest ease be drained, and thus a large portion of extremely fertile land be reclaimed. The surrounding country is particularly luxuriant; and in the early history of Terceira, when the cultivation of tobacco and the sugar cane was encouraged, rendered Praya a comparatively wealthy, thriving place; but it is now calamitously reduced, its sickly inhabitants living almost in indolence. It assumed, at the time I refer to, a more than usual air of gaiety and activity in consequence of the British corps of marines belonging to the expedition being quartered there; and the Admiral took this opportunity of passing them in review with Colonel Hodges, who, *prompted* by Major Williams, put them through the different movements to exhibit their improved condition; which really, when one recollected their raggamuffin, undisciplined character but a few weeks previous, reflected the greatest possible credit on any man who could thus reduce them to ready obedience, and model them from clodhoppers and artisans to a steady controllable military body. But I must do Major Williams the justice to intimate, that to *him* belongs the merit

of having successfully accomplished such a task: Colonel Hodges is no soldier; indeed, could not be, from the nature of his previous services. Before his Lusitanian campaign, he has had no regimental experience, since he was a youthful subaltern: besides which, he wanted sufficient temper to deal with the *men*, and talent as well as taste to deal with and direct the *officers*. He was too ambitious and egotistical, as may be seen in his *Autobiographical* work: and his over-ambition closed his carcer. Whatever cause he might have imagined for indignation and offence at the Emperor's conduct, it was very bad taste to return the mark of distinction Don Pedro chose to honor him with. Major Williams has had much experience, and is an excellent officer as well as soldier; brave as his sword, and cool as a cucumber in the field of battle—with conciliating manners and address, that won him the hearts of his companions as well as of the soldiers, who recognised his influence by a ready submission, even to his looks. I am the more induced thus to express myself in his favor in consequence of the neglect he has experienced through the jealousy and intrigues of *his own* countrymen. I have witnessed his collected, steady conduct in the field more than once before Oporto:

on one occasion it called forth the most enthusiastic expressions of admiration and gratitude from the Emperor, who expressly sent for, and taking him by both hands acknowledged his conduct with the most marked feeling. But it is unfortunately too often the fate of modest, unassuming men to be kept in the rear, and for merit to be awarded to those who can the most loudly applaud themselves.

What speaks volumes in praise of this battalion and its ameliorated character, is the fact that the inhabitants, though Miguelites, lived on good terms with them, and expressed considerable regret when they left. Of course I now speak in a general sense; for on occasions like these, little events more or less exceptionable must always occur, arising from the love either of wine or of women so common to the military life; there was no lack of such incidents to vary the monotony of life at Praya—both amongst the officers and men; the skilful stratagems of the heroes in the cause of love were, as we have related, employed to assail the *maiden* tenants of the cloistered cell as well as the amorous dames of private dwellings. To the former it was soon found that a silver key from a neighbouring blacksmith was quite sufficient

to obtain access, on condition of first procuring permission from the patronizing Cyprian within.

Of all the convents I saw or heard of at the Azores, that of Praya was pre-eminent for the abandoned open profligacy of the nuns—who, even at the *grille*, were positively indecent in manners and language, often asking for questionable prints, which, on one occasion were, in bad taste, shewn them by an individual. Almost every veiled inmate was the professed paramour of some friar or inhabitant of the town; but on occasions like the present often proved faithless to these swains, giving rise thereby to an infinity of ludicrous scenes and incidents amongst our countrymen—one of which I cannot resist detailing. An amorous youth of the English corps, better skilled in the national dialect (as well perhaps as in gallantry) than his mess-mates, having early after their arrival at Praya obtained from the celebrated blacksmith the necessary conditions for procuring an entry to the shrine of Nossa Senhora da Luz, was imprudent enough to communicate his success (as well as the plan he was obliged to adopt of proceeding thither at nine o'clock in the costume of the holy sisters,) to a certain waggish brother officer, who no sooner heard it, than he resolved on a little

practical fun for the amusement of himself and a few friends: he accordingly planned a conspiracy; and to give it an additional touch of the comic, concocted a double plot against our gallant adventurer, whose mistress he learnt was the paramour of the Juiz de Fora. It was therefore determined that the Juiz de Fora should not only be informed of the infidelity of his innamorata, but apprized likewise of the hour and mode by which she intended to admit her heretical visitor within the sacred walls, in order that he might lie in wait for the offender. In the mean time the wag divulged the affair to a party of his brother officers, who, it was proposed should, as well as himself, dress in private's clothes, and at the appointed hour sally forth to attack the virtue of the pseudo-nun on her road to the conventual edifice. All being prepared under every necessary precaution, and the soldiers snugly ensconced in their masked retreat, the convent bell no sooner tolled the hour of nine than the nun was seen striding boldly and with hasty steps across the square, accompanied by an antiquated female guardian; and, almost simultaneously, rushed forth from their lurking place the disguised party of soldiers, who unceremoniously laid violent hands on the affrighted couple: the

old lady waxed warm and clamorous; the young one, horrified at the awkward predicament, screamed in a feigned female voice for help, and prayed for mercy; but prayers and resistance were equally vain, and at the moment when our wags affected *proceeding to extremities*, the Juiz de Fora hurried up with his gang, and of course lost no time in detecting and exposing the disguised nun. The whole party being engaged in noisy contest, two of the officers slipped away—and in a few seconds returning in their proper attire, assumed an air of dignified importance, enquiring into the cause of this nocturnal broil. On hearing a relation of the fact, they ordered the men to the barracks with the disguised nun as a prisoner, assuring the Juiz de Fora that proper notice would be taken of the circumstance in the morning, and the offender duly punished, which perfectly satisfied the jealousy of the incensed magistrate, and greatly relieved the distress of the young gallant—who found himself thus easily extricated from the vengeance of his *irate* rival, though not a little mortified when he learnt over the evening bottle that the whole was the result of a conspiracy against his adventure to the cloister.

One of the most tragical events that occurred

during the sojourn of our battalion at Praya was the death of captain Ramus—an active, intelligent officer—who, two days before our arrival, had gone out with his dog and gun to shoot wild pigeons, wherewith the rocks abound all round that coast. His absence at the usual dinner hour having excited alarm, bugles were sent round in various directions, with armed men, to rescue him from the outlawed Miguelites, who it was supposed might have seized him; but both officers and men fruitlessly returned that night from the search. The following morning, however, some fishermen, hearing of the circumstance, intimated their having seen an officer on the heights with his gun, but considering him to be occupied in the pursuit of his sport, they took no further notice; the place being pointed out was immediately examined; and at the bottom of the precipice he was found a distended corpse shattered to pieces—with his poor faithful dog still trembling aloft, in the dangerous position from whence his master had fallen. It was naturally inferred that he had ventured too far on the crumbling masses of lava whereof the rocks there are all composed, and that in making an exertion to extricate himself he was precipitated to the bottom. The place where his dog and gun

were found, proved the impossibility almost of either advancing or retreating, and the circumstance of his watch, rings, etc., being still on his person, testified satisfactorily that his fate had not been hastened by the hands of the robber and assassin. Funeral obsequies were performed by his brother officers the following day; and he was buried with military honors by permission of the Portuguese commandant of engineers, in the battery, where a monumental stone is now erected with a suitable inscription to record his calamitous and untimely end. Poor fellow! he was particularly fond of sketching; and, by a remarkable coincidence, had only a few days before committed to his book a skilful outline of some of the neighbouring romantic rocks, with which he had blended a most faithful transcript of the dismal fate that awaited him,—having depicted, namely, the scene under the influence of dark stormy weather, with a man groping about, just on the point of stepping over the fearful heights. Before he was found, it was strongly suspected he had suffered a more cruel death at the hands of the Miguelite bandits; for at that period, in consequence of their numbers and persecution, it became dangerous to venture alone to any distance from the

town without being armed. They had already made many attempts against individuals of the corps; and indeed one too many; for they once met a stout-hearted Hibernian — who, being attacked by a party of them, and seeing such fearful odds against him, retreated into a small cave as a better position for defence; when, finding he could not be injured by missiles, they at length ventured to advance, aiming back-handed blows with long knives: until one, having stung Paddy in the lips, warmed his island-blood, and urged him in despair to make a sally, wherein he put his bayonet into one ruffian and dispatched him! and this so intimidated the rest, that Pat was left master of the field, and returned to amuse his companions with the details of the adventure over their evening grog.

Notwithstanding the volcanic mounds in every part of the island of Terceira appear to be the result of recent eruptions, I could trace none any where on record except that in 1761 from the Pic of Bagacina, which threw out a current of lava that descended nearly a league towards the sea. Many earthquakes have created considerable devastation at times—particularly the one of 1614, which laid prostrate almost every edifice

in the town of Praya. Since that period, the opening of the vapour springs at Euxofre and other places has much diminished the tendency. Formerly there were mineral springs of great celebrity at this place, but they have long disappeared from the surface.

From Praya we proceeded to Angra by land, a distance of fifteen miles, through a country in places full of romantic splendour, and bursting with natural luxuriance—only wanting employment of the common energies of man to render it like the promised country to the Israelites, "a land flowing with milk and honey." The intervening villages are Cabodapraya, Fontebastarda, San Sebastian, Porto Judeo, and Riberinha—the last-mentioned of which is rather a small town beautifully situated about a mile from the sea on a plain hemmed in on the land side by picturesque mountains. Poultry seemed to abound even at the poorest hamlets; the turkeys were excessively fine, but geese no where to be found. The pigs of Terceira, which really almost interrupt the traveller's passage through the towns and villages, transcend those of all the islands in size, condition, and flavor of the meat.

Though the S.E. wind was blowing, the atmo-

sphere was deliciously mild; and the birds, as evening drew nigh, filled the air with the echoes of their varied song. I was struck with the incalculable abundance of black-birds which, although caught and eaten by the natives, still seem to pervade the country in undiminished numbers. Every step of the observant traveller, in these islands, tends to awaken a sense of their value, as a place of abode. Independent of the loveliness of climate, they are peculiarly celebrated for being free from venemous reptiles, nor is such a thing known to occur as a case of hydrophobia, which I conceive may be attributable to the equality of atmospheric temperature.

The villages on the opposite north and western sides of the island are—from Villanova in succession—Agualva, Quatroribeiras, Biscoitos, Altares, Serretta, Sancta Barbara, San Bartolomeo, and San Matheo, which last is only half a league to the west of the city.

CHAPTER IV.

THE ISLAND OF ST. GEORGE.

During our sojourn at Fayal, in the month of May, 1831, I availed myself of an opportunity of going over to this island, in one of our small craft, having an eager curiosity to visit one or two interesting points previously intimated to me by my intelligent friend Mosinho d'Albuquerque; and I had no reason to regret the excursion, since it undeceived me in an opinion I had previously formed, of this being a mere barren, uncultivated and uninhabitable mass of rock, which can be the only idea of those who view it at a short distance from the sea.

St. George's was the fourth explored island of this Archipelago. It must have been discovered ever since the colonization of Terceira: from whence it is, together with Pico, perfectly visible to the

naked eye. At all events Jacomo de Bruges, the colonist of Terceira, on the 28th April, 1450, sent for the first time Guilherme van Deraga, one of his Flemish followers, to take possession of and colonize it. He landed the same day on the easternmost point, now denominated Do Topo, where he established a settlement, called Topo from its terminal position,* and gave to the island the name of St. George, in celebration of the day, it being the anniversary of that Saint. On this account it has been attached to the Captaincy of Terceira, and since to the department of Angra, notwithstanding it is so closely united to Pico and Fayal, which belong by political division to a totally distinct department.

St. George's is a long narrow island, lying in a W.N.W. and E.S.E. direction, about thirty five miles in length and five in breadth, longitudinally intersected by a narrow mountainous chain, with an abrupt mural descent towards the north shore, and a flat table land on the summit, whose extreme height is about 2000 feet from the level of the ocean. Its eastern and western extremities are each terminated by a small volcanic islet: the

* Topo, a point, end or top.

latter called Ponta do Rosales, is in 38° 41′ N. and 28° 20′ W. longitude; and the former, Ponta do Topo, in 38° 15′ N. 27°. 50′. W. longitude, being thirty one miles W.S.W. $\frac{3}{4}$ W. from Mount Brazil, in Terceira, and only nine from the island of Pico.

The physical character of this island is somewhat different to that of Terceira or St. Michael's, having apparently a more recent volcanic origin; and it is still subject to convulsive movements, annually occasioning considerable alarm to the inhabitants. The eruptions have been extremely violent, and generally confined to the southern coast, causing there great ravages. The earliest on record is that of 1580, half a league from the town of Vellas: which lasted many days and sent forth torrents of lava, that flowed down to the sea, and now form the rugged rocks bordering that coast. The next was in 1691, when a submarine convulsion threw up several islets on the coast, which soon again submerged: an exactly similar operation occurred in 1720, attended with earthquakes; and in 1757, another most violent earthquake occurred, accompanied with a simultaneous submarine eruption, that threw up eighteen small islets about 300 yards from the coast: these, like the others, all submerged again in the course

of a few years. The last, and it appears the most destructive, was in May 1808, near the small town of Urzelina, which even spread terror and dismay amongst the neighbouring islanders of Pico and Fayal. Its approach was announced by tremendous and awful subterranean noises at a neighbouring caldeira, or extinct crater—which continued in a state of agitation for some days, until the opening, first, of an immense crater, and afterwards of from twelve to fifteen smaller ones, which vomited forth torrents of burning lava during nearly twenty-five days—desolating the most fruitful part of the country, overwhelming beautiful pastures, vineyards, cornfields, and herds of cattle, and enveloping, in its course, part of the town of Urzelina, from whence the stream, however, miraculously turned off, and thus spared the lives of several thousand inhabitants. Since this disastrous event no further eruption has occurred, but the island is annually visited by alarming earthquakes which generally take place about the close of the summer.

It was at this place I first landed, and bent my steps to the horrible scene of devastation in the vicinity. Instead of the verdant freshness of the meadows, instead of the fruitful loveliness of the

vine, and luxuriant fertility of the cornfield, the country around exhibits one unvaried tract of black-looking lava scoriæ and cinders—displaying a gloomy, uninhabitable region, scarcely redeemable by the labour of another century. The adjoining lands are, as formerly, still celebrated for the rich and superior quality of the wine they produce, (particularly at a place called Castelhetes) which is perhaps of a more generous character than at any of the Azores. It is of course all taken to Fayal; and like that of Pico, sold under the appellation of Fayal wine. The inhabitants also make a small portion of sweet wine, which, from its excellent flavor, is called Angelica. It is made like all other passado or sweet wines, by keeping the grapes, and partially drying them in the sun until the saccharine quality is generated, when they press the juice out, and cask it. Their vineyards are generally on the hill-sides, among the older lava, amidst the fissures of which they plant the vine, introducing with it a portion of soil obliged to be annually renewed on account of the winter rains, which entirely wash it away. This new soil is purchased at Fayal, it being an ingredient not very thickly diffused over the island, and hence it does not produce grain beyond a sufficiency of maize for their own consumption.

From hence I took a mule and guide to the town and port of Vellas, which lies two leagues along the shore to the westward, and is the capital of the island, with a population of 4,000 souls,—situated on the shore of a large bay, between points Queimada and Morro. Within the former, to the east, is good anchorage and an excellent quay—alongside which moderate-sized vessels can lie, to take in, or discharge their cargoes. The town is walled in on the sea side, and on the opposite bordered by high mountains, the whole being defended by three forts *without guns;* a convent and monastery are of course the indispensible concomitants of this as of all other Portuguese towns; the people here appeared, nevertheless, to enjoy a superior condition to those of Terceira: there is certainly more activity and industry amongst them, and they possess a greater air of independence. Almost the whole population of the island, amounting to 20,000 souls, is on the south side, the north coast being rocky, and less productive. The table-land of the mountain is all composed of beautiful pasture, where the inhabitants feed large herds of fine cattle, producing consequently butter and cheese, both of which are celebrated, and sent in large quantities for the supply of Horta. St. George's also abounds in the potatoe spe-

cies—the common, the sweet and the yam; the latter being superior to those of any of the Azores, and almost equal to West Indian, both in size and flavor. The inhabitants are now beginning to cultivate fruits to a greater extent than formerly, particularly the orange and lemon, which—from the southern sheltered position of their lands—may be propagated with the greatest success. Until the present revolution, they used to export quantities of cattle both to Madeira and Lisbon; though not so fat, the meat is not to be surpassed in sweetness even by our own English beef.

After passing an evening in the *luxuries* of Georgian hospitality, I was conducted, the following morning, to a beautiful little picturesque spot a short distance to the westward of the town, which is alone sufficiently attractive to induce an excursion to the island. It consists of a romantic bason encircled by rocks of lava, the passage whereto from the sea, with which it is connected, is through an elegantly formed arch, composed of fine perfect specimens of prismatic basalt, supported by solid compact masses of the same substance, the summit being overlaid with a stratum of scoriæ, cinders, and soil thickly covered with verdant shrubs, heaths, and evergreens. It

is impossible to conceive a more interesting picture, of the kind; and the fishermen who frequent the neighbourhood say, its vicinity abounds in rock shell-fish, which the inhabitants are particularly fond of — often coming there in parties to gather them.

From hence I returned through Vellas, and embarked again in the yacht, at Calheta, a small town four leagues to the eastward. It is situated at the base of a rocky height, which encloses it on the land side, and has a small port or calheta* from whence it takes its name.

This island had always quietly submitted to the fate of the others, until the commencement of the present revolution, when for the first time it became, during a few days, the theatre of war, being defended by a body of Miguelite troops. Count Villa Flor landed his little force at Ribeira do Nabo, (a small place between Urzelina and Vellas), on the 9th May 1831, with the intention of taking possession of the island, previous to proceeding to Fayal: but the Miguelites having the advantage of artillery, hoped to repel their invaders, and in the meantime to obtain relief from head-quarters. Consequently they formed a determination to resist.

* Calheta, a creek.

However, after two or three successful skirmishes on the part of the constitutionalists, they retreated rapidly to Calheta, with the intention of making their escape to Fayal, in which intention they were again disappointed by the prompt movements of Major Pacheco, a brave active officer, who, after completely worsting, closely pursued them, and took or destroyed the whole, excepting thirty men who, escaping in a launch, reached Fayal in safety.

CHAPTER V.

THE ISLAND OF GRACIOSA.

ACCORDING to the loose desultory mention made of these islands by the early Portuguese writers, who describe Graciosa as the fifth in the order of discovery, it would be natural to infer that such was literally the fact; and that Pico and Fayal were the result of subsequent research. This however is not so:—the discovery of the two latter must indisputably have been contemporaneous with that of St. George's, to which they are in close neighbourhood—Fayal being but fifteen miles from its shores, whilst Pico is only nine miles, and in consequence of its great altitude, is literally "looked up to" from St. George's. The meaning therefore of Graciosa being ranked as fifth on the list of this Archipelago is, that, notwithstanding the vicinity of Pico and Fayal, the colonists of St. George's did

not visit them until three years after their own establishment; and that in the mean time, nearly about the middle of the year 1451, some Terceiran navigators discovered and took possession of Graciosa, which name the place subsequently received in consequence of the superior beauty and attractiveness it possesses, when viewed from the sea: for, although the islands already described are so rich and fertile, yet, on account of their black rock-bound coasts, they present to the eye of the distant observer rather an inhospitable, uninviting aspect. Graciosa, on the contrary, being low all round its shores, and gradually rising towards an elevated centre, unfolds the richness of its intermediate luxuriant undulations, and fertile plains, to the spectator who may be sailing along its coasts; and certainly claims the merit of being externally one of the most fascinating of the Azores. On first approaching it, I was, in common with the rest of my companions, immediately struck with this fact; and both whilst cruizing in its vicinity and viewing it in detail, had further reason to indulge the idea.

It is only twelve miles in length, and six in breadth, situated twenty-eight miles to the N. W. of Terceira and twenty north of St. George's with

a little group of islets to the south, called the Gaivotos, and one to the east, entitled the island of Homezidos. It contains a population of 12,000 souls, who inhabit the town of Santa Cruz and village of Señora de Guadaloupe, at the N.W. end, and the town of Praya, and village of Señhora de Luz, at the S.E. extremity. Santa Cruz is the capital, with 3,000 inhabitants ; it is, however, a dangerous, exposed roadstead, with a rocky bottom —the best anchorage of the island being to the southward, at Ponta Carapacho, in latitude 38° 54′ N.; 27° 53′ W. longitude. It is a most remarkable fact, that in all the operations of nature, and the whimsical forms assumed by her in the different convulsions that have occurred in the archipelago of the Azores, no creek, inlet, or bay has been formed in any one of them to constitute a safe port, sufficiently sheltered from the sea, without the aid of art; nor has any island, or set of islets, been thrown up in such a position as to present a protected landlocked anchorage.

Graciosa appears to me to be of earlier origin than any of the forementioned islands. With the exception of earthquakes, no volcanic movements have occurred since its discovery. The lavas of which it is composed are decidedly of older forma-

tion, being in a greater state of decomposition, and with a thicker stratum of vegetable soil on the surface. The peak to which the island runs up in the centre, though evidently an extinct crater, is of very ancient date, and now presents, within its internal limits, a curious, interesting scene of spontaneous luxuriance. In consequence of the progress of decomposition being farther advanced, the soil of Graciosa is esteemed the most fertile of the Azores; and if it were cultivated in proportion to its capacities, the island might be rendered one of extraordinary productiveness. Even now, without art, and with very trifling labour, it abounds with pulse of all sorts, and yams, besides a little maize, and large quantities of barley, with some good pasturage. It produces likewise a moderately good sort of wine and brandy, 1,500 pipes of which are annually exported. Graciosa is an excellent place for a vessel to replenish stock at; cattle, vegetables, poultry, sheep, goats, and hogs being alike cheap and abundant; the latter, indeed, considerably finer than elsewhere. The inhabitants are peaceable and well-disposed, with an inclination to be industrious, had they a stimulus thereto. They manufacture all the linen and woollen cloth consumed by the lower classes, and, unt[illegible]

exported a large quantity of the latter to the Brazils.

Like almost all the Azores, Graciosa was originally covered with wooded tracts, until burnt and cleared away for the cultivation of the sugar-cane and tobacco-plant, the latter being supplied amply, and of excellent species. But since those golden days of Azorean prosperity, the island has been disregarded by the mother country; and, after the expulsion of the Spaniards and restoration of the Braganza dynasty, in 1640, it became a prey to the barbarities of the Algerines, who for several years made descents on its coasts, committing every species of robbery and destruction, and carrying off the inhabitants, who were condemned to slavery, and publicly sold at the markets of Fez, and other places.

CHAPTER VI.

THE DEPARTMENT OF HORTA,

CONTAINING FAYAL, PICO, CORVO, AND FLORES.

THE ISLAND OF FAYAL.

On the 6th of May, 1831, I arrived, with Admiral Sartorius, at Fayal, in Her Most Faithful Majesty's ship, Raynha de Portugal; in the first place, for the purpose of fishing our mainmast, which, together with almost all the other masts in the ship, was unsound from the commencement of our enterprise; and, in the second place, because affairs were not yet matured for the general embarkation of the expedition, which rendered it more prudent to avail ourselves of a comparatively sheltered roadstead, than to remain at anchor, or cruizing off Ponte Delgada, distressing the ship, and tearing her stores to pieces. And had the

Admiral's *urgent* advice been acted upon, in the first instance, viz. to appoint Fayal the place of marine rendezvous until the moment of general readiness, how much time and expense might have been saved, both to the slender resource of the government, and to the various owners of the transports engaged in our service. No place in the Azores is better, or is indeed in any way, fitted for such purpose excepting Fayal (as I am about subsequently to prove), both with relation to its being a place of safety, and furnishing supplies of all sorts, *munitions de bouche, ou munitions de marine.*

Our sojourn here lasted three weeks, during the most attractive and exhilarating season of the year, which gave me a favorable opportunity of seeing the island, and becoming intimately acquainted with its character and resources in various ways.

Fayal, although long within view of the colonists of both Terceira and St. George's, was not visited until the year 1453, when those of the latter place went over, from time to time, and, after various researches, formed little establishments, to take advantage of the superior soil they found. But it was not formally taken possession of, until thirteen years after, when the Duchess of Burgundy (to

whom the Azores were at that time transferred as a marriage portion by Alphonso V.) sent out Flemish settlers, under Job de Huerta, whom she appointed governing colonist of the island. Their first place of settlement was in a rich territory, since denominated by the Portuguese the Valley of Flamingos, in consequence of the original possessors, and which continues to the present day the best cultivated and most productive part of the country. On the first arrival of these settlers, almost the whole island was enveloped in luxurious underwood, splendid shrubs, or trees of various sizes and sorts, particularly a species of that class called, according to Linnæan nomenclature, Myrica, or the Candelberry myrtle—but which the Portuguese, erroneously supposing it to be of the beech tribe, termed *Faya*—hence, in consequence of the quantity found there, distinguishing the island by the name of Fayal. This tree was, for the first time, brought to England by a Mr. Masson, in the year 1777; then planted in the garden at Kew, and the newly introduced species was designated by its Portuguese cognomen, Myrica Faya, or Azorean Candleberry Myrtle. In all these islands it is of profuse and rapid growth, attaining the size of a forest tree; and is, on account of its

evergreen brightness, an ornamental acquisition to a garden or in the vicinity of a house. There, however, its *uses* only are appreciated and studied, and, as before observed, it is thickly introduced in all the protecting plantations round the orange quintas.

The Azores reverting again to the Portuguese crown by the death of the Duchess of Burgundy, numbers of settlers came out from Portugal to Fayal, to participate in the advantages the Flemish were enjoying; and it soon became a productive island, much frequented on account of its convenient roadstead, in the sixteenth century, during the flourishing epoch of Portuguese commerce, by their homeward-bound fleets from India—as well as, during the Spanish dominion, by the richly laden squadrons from Spanish America.

It was at this period that the squadrons of Raleigh and Essex made frequent descents on the island, destroying, on one occasion, the fortifications, carrying off the governor, and seizing or burning the whole of a Spanish homeward-bound fleet from Mexico. In more modern times, also, it has been a place of rendezvous for American privateers during our wars with that country; and for this purpose it doubtless offers incalculable

convenience and advantages, and might, under such circumstances, become a great source of annoyance to our homeward trade to Europe. Since the recent events in Portugal, the inhabitants, who are staunch constitutionalists, involuntarily submitted to the yoke of Don Miguel's oppressive government, until the 23rd June, 1831, when Count Villa Flor (the hero of the Azorean struggle), passed over, in open boats, from the opposite island, in the face of a fine Miguelite corvette; and, with his little troop, entered Horta, where they were received with joyful acclamations by the natives, who immediately proclaimed their legitimate sovereign, Donna Maria II.

The island of Fayal is twelve miles long and ten broad. It has nearly a circular form, and rises from the sea, with gradual undulations terminating, at the S. E. side, in a lofty peak, nearly 3,000 feet high, having on its summit the crater, or caldeira, of an ancient volcano, whose internal character constitutes a most interesting object of curiosity. The island is considerably less rocky than Terceira or St. Michael's, and possesses, in proportion, a larger quantity of cultivatable soil; yet scarcely one quarter of the whole is made

available. What a field for the emigration of an industrious race!

We entered the roadstead of Horta early in the morning—when the sun, just emerged from behind the heights of Pico, was shedding his first warm tints over the town and its vicinity—which, as it gradually unfolded to our view, whilst rounding the headland of Ponta da Guia, presented a most captivating spectacle to the eye of the stranger, who was approaching it for the first time. Such was my case; and, justly appreciating its excellence, under impressions increased at that moment by the loveliness of the climate and splendor of the morning sky, I could not help giving vent to ejaculations of astonishment, that the Azores had not more frequently been made a bone of contention and object of reprisal, amidst the various ambitious projects of rival states and belligerent powers.

Horta was founded, about 1460, by the first colonist, Job de Huerta, of whose name it is a corruption. It is the capital of Fayal, as also of the western department, containing about 10,000 inhabitants, and is situated in a deep crescented bay, bounded on the north by a high bold promon-

tory, called Ponta Espalamaca, (on the summit whereof is a telegraph,) and, on the south, by the rugged rocky point of Ponta da Guia—distant from each other a little more than two miles and a quarter. The town stretches along the bottom of the bay, in beautiful amphitheatrical form, and is adorned with numerous convents and churches, surmounted by a sloping eminence, whereon conspicuously stands the once noble palace of the ex-Jesuits, (the most sumptuous erected by them in theAzores,) the splendid Carmelite monastery, with its Arabian turrets, and the convent of St. Antonio, perched on an isolated terrace to the right. These, blended with the neighbouring gardens and quintas, and their luxuriant plantations and orange groves, and terminated, in the back-ground, by the distant peak of the caldeira, constitute a scene more resembling the dreams and fictitious beauties of an Arabian tale, than real existence.

On landing, however, I found much of this external attractiveness vanish, *au premier coup-d'œil*. The town is not so good as the capitals of the other departments, being composed only of one straggling irregular street, except at the western extremity, where it terminates by a second, branching off at an angle in the form of a fork.

It is defended by three forts, one at each end, the other in the centre, which is the largest, called Santa Cruz, from whence a wall and parapet extend along the sea, as far as the western battery. The pavement is execrable, though in the course of improvement, according to the directions and exertions of the then governor, Colonel Fonseca—whose plans for the general improvement of Horta, considering his limited power and means, reflect unbounded credit both on his genius and feelings. Were such individuals selected for the government of all these islands, they would, in a very few years, under the influence of the charter, assume a totally different character. Colonel Fonseca is a mild, gentlemanly, intelligent man, whose soldier-like bravery, and merits as an officer, have been amply put to the test during the present struggle in his native country, where he long and actively discharged the duties of his responsible office as Governor of the Foz Castle, at Oporto. May his merits and usefulness be made manifest in some more important place than these sheets!

As a roadstead, the Bay of Horta unquestionably offers greater shelter and advantages than are found at any of the other islands. It is nearly a mile deep, protected in front, to the east, by the

gigantic form of Pico, which is only four miles distant, and to the north by the island of St. George, whose transverse position effectually excludes the violence of the sea in that direction. It is, however, exposed to the winds from S.E. to to S.S.W., and even S.W.; but the violence of a gale and heavy sea from those points is greatly counteracted by a southerly current, prevailing through the channel, which considerably diminishes the strain on ships' cables, though, at the same time, it causes a bubbling cross sea, as we had an opportunity of proving; for, during the bad weather, our frigate was frequently rolling guns under, which for many days prevented the possibility of proceeding in the operation of fishing the mast. Even if, by any accident, or from bad ground tackling, a vessel should part from her anchors in S.E. gales, she can always clear the northern point, and run into smooth water, to leeward of the island. In this consideration, it is most advisable not to anchor too near the north end of the bay. Good anchorage may be found from eighteen to thirty-five fathoms, with excellent holding-ground, and the port may be run for from any direction, without other danger than Chapman's Rock, which

lies in the southern channel, about 22 feet below the surface at low water, and is in the following bearings: Ponta Espalamaca, N. by W. three miles and a quarter; the tower of the Jesuits' college on with the north angle of the Carmelite convent; and the south point of Monte de Guia on with the chapitel at the east point of the Bay of Feiteira. It is twenty fathoms in length, lying N.N.E. and S.S.W. and ten broad; and, notwithstanding its depth under water, the sea, in violent winds, breaks over to such a degree that it sometimes bears the appearance of a waterspout.

Independent of the advantages Horta possesses as an anchorage, it might be rendered of incomparably greater value by the construction of an enclosed port and harbor, which can be effected with ease and little expense, at least in comparison with the incalculable benefits that must inevitably occur from such a project if properly carried into execution.

The point of land called Monte da Guia, which forms the southern boundary of the bay, has evidently been originally a detached island, but subsequently united by an immense red-looking mound composed of volcanic cinders, and now called

Monte Queimada (burnt mountain), that has been thrown* up, and is connected on the east side with Monte de Guia by a low sandy ridge, and with the main by a stratum of loose tuff and scoriæ—whose extreme length from the water, on each side, is 153 fathoms,† and being only nineteen feet from the level of the sea in its deepest part, and fifteen in the shallowest.

This interposition of Monte Queimada, besides enclosing the Bay of Horta on one side, has formed a large bason on the other with a fine sandy shore called Port Pin, the entrance to which from the sea is constructed by the reefs of rocks that run out from each side, and would very much facilitate the proposed plan for establishing the harbour; namely that of filling up the passage on the sea side, and connecting Port Pin with the Bay of Horta, by cutting a canal through the above-mentioned tract of loose tuff; previous, however, to doing this, it may be deemed more advisable to run out a long mole from the base of Monte Queimada on the

* There is no record of any occurrence of the kind, since the first discovery of the island; but no person can view it with a geological eye without coming to the same conclusion.

† This measurement was given me by Colonel Fonseca, under whose directions it was accurately taken.

north side, where nature has already commenced the work by a reef of rocks which would form an admirable foundation for the wall. The small portion of the bay thus enclosed by the mole would, independent of the other bason, offer accommodation for many even large vessels whilst refitting, discharging, or repairing; but in conjunction with Port Pin, would attach immense commercial importance to Horta, and the Azores in general, from their geographical position.

Horta already possesses a compact little naval arsenal established by our officers whilst there; and for the purposes of commercial vessels there are two or three private yards well supplied with marine stores, and through whose agents every facility is given for procuring provisions, fresh stock, and vegetables, for which there is an immense demand in consequence of the numerous American whalers that annually visit Fayal, and give to Horta a degree of activity that does not belong to any of the other islands.

In my intimate association with the American Consul's family, where I occasionally met the masters of these vessels, I learnt all the details of this branch of trade, and was surprised at the extent to which it was pursued in these seas, and

monopolized by the Americans, who employ annually between sixty and eighty vessels of from two to three hundred tons each. They generally consist of those enterprizing fellows from New Bedford or Nantucket; and their plan is, first to fish in the neighbourhood of the Azores for the spermaceti whale until June and July, when, having collected four or five hundred barrels of oil, they come to Horta, tranship it for America, and after having replenished their stock of water and provisions, proceed again to the South Atlantic for what they call the right whale, which is a small species and does not produce much oil, yet from great numbers enables vessels in a short time to collect a cargo. This voyage occupies them altogether ten or eleven months, during which they generally take about 2,000 barrels of oil, averaging a net profit of full 50 per cent to the owners after all expenses are paid. Some of these vessels will continue their voyage from the South Atlantic to the Pacific for the black Greenland whale; in which case they prolong their stay from home three and sometimes four years, transmitting their oil from time to time by empty or half-laden homeward-bound vessels, and recruiting their stock on the shores of the Pacific. This plan, I was informed

by the Consul, was a very profitable one, and pursued more particularly by the Nantucket people, who have the reputation within the last two or three years of being the most enterprising and expert whalers in America and perhaps the world. The greatest moderation and sobriety is observed by the crews of these vessels, who are now generally under the influence of their native temperance societies, and drink nothing but water, notwithstanding the arduous nature of their service—which goes very far towards proving how unnecessary the use of ardent spirits is in cases of wet and cold; and that cleanliness, good food, and dry clothing, are infinitely more efficacious in supporting health. The change, however, is sensibly felt at Fayal, where they formerly laid in their stock of wine and spirits, enabling the merchants to dispose annually of a considerable quantity amongst their numerous ships.

These adventurers never attack a fine whale, in consequence of its ferocious nature and retaliating spirit; although one of the masters told me he was in a ship two years before that had done so; whereupon the animal immediately assailed the vessel, and lashed at it with such violence as to stave in her bows, obliging the crew to save them-

selves in their boats and retreat for safety to another whaler in their company. Some of my readers may be inclined to exclaim, "Very like a whale!" however, from the concurrence of many different testimonies, I have every reason to believe the truth of the circumstance.

How comes it that Portugal will not encourage the pursuit of this trade, and thus, by giving employment to her commercial marine, lay the foundation of other political resources important to her condition? namely, activity in every branch connected with the shipping interests, besides the formation of good seamen, for which than this trade there cannot be a better school? Why do not the islanders themselves follow the pursuit rather than tamely see it monopolized by foreigners? It would at once become a source of emolument calculated to give an impulse to other adventures and speculations, and thus to start the career of public prosperity. They have advantages over every other nation, arising from their favourable position, which, by enabling them to avoid the enormous expenses of outfit, would ensure greater profits to the traders than even the enterprising Americans gain; for, in consequence of the contiguity of the fishing ground, smaller vessels would equally answer the purpose,

and the cheap provisions, to which the islanders are accustomed, would suffice for their short voyages; thus considerably reducing the great expenses of outfit experienced by the Americans.

Our stay at Horta, whilst performing the various services of the expedition, was rendered extremely agreeable by the kindness and hospitality, not only of our own countrymen, but especially of the amiable family of the American Consul, Mr. Dabney—at whose elegant mansion, in the outskirts of the town, every Englishman belonging to our squadron experienced at all times unostentatious friendship, and a hearty welcome; and this, combined with the intellectual attainments characterising his domestic circle, impressed on the hearts of all who shared the advantage a strong sense of gratitude, together with many interesting recollections, whenever they revert to their visits at the "*Abode of the willow.*" Through this family I acquired considerable local information, and, in their agreeable company, visited many attractive or curious scenes, which otherwise must have escaped my notice. Their mansion is beautifully situated on an eminence above the town in front of the sublime Pico, commanding an extensive view of the bay, together with a partial prospect of the town to

the right; while an adjoining garden is cultivated in such a manner as to proclaim at once the refined taste, intelligence, and scientific skill of the owner. European plants and flowers, tropical fruits, trees, evergreens, and shrubs, all concentrate their sweetness in this little Eden, and prove how productive and beautiful the whole island might become under the hands of similar industry and skill. Surrounded by such horticultural magnificence I felt as if I were transported amidst the oriental riches and garden luxuries of some Arabian kiosk.

A very few days after my arrival I accompanied this agreeable family, *en cavalcade*, to the heights of the promontory of Espalamaca, for the purpose of enjoying the magnificent panoramic prospect that position commands. To the north we had the rocky island of St. George rising up like a formidable barrier against the expansive ocean; the western coast of Fayal with the town and bay of Praya, stretched along the base of the heights on which we were standing. To the east appeared the tremendous form of Pico, splendidly decorated with the verdant livery of spring, and rearing his head to the clouds, protecting from the oriental blasts and sea the beautiful bay and town of

Horta, that lay in a graceful crescent form along the coast to the south, terminating at the point beneath us. No general view of the place could equal this, and we examined it in detail through the telescope belonging to the signal station. Although in the middle of May, the females of our party were not a little inconvenienced, in this lofty position, by the rude boisterous wind, which almost equalled the northern blasts of our English winter. It is common in this month, and particularly, as I was informed, to these three islands, in consequence of their position in the near neighbourhood of the heights of Pico, the passage between which forms a sort of tunnel, unceasingly engendering squalls and blasts that frequently in the winter months rival those of the most outrageous latitudes. In the autumn the island is subject to shocks of earthquake—two or three occurring annually at that season, though not with any degree of violence; they are invariably foretold by great droughts and sometimes the drying up of wells and springs, which is immediately followed by heavy rains and the earthquake. On our return we visited the whimsical quinta of a late Dutch consul, who has certainly manifested the possession of a greater abundance of money than

taste by erecting such a childish piece of tawdry patch-work. It might become the neighbourhood of Haerlem or Nimeguen, but is quite out of character in any part of the Western Islands. It is ornamented throughout with *pretty* shell work, neatly finished pavements, or walls faced with broken bits of crockery and porcelain, surmounted by little Dutch images, etc.

I found the surrounding country in a better state of culture than at the other islands: all the crops appeared abundant and luxuriant, and were in the vicinity of the town confined to those productions most in demand amongst the shipping that frequented the port,—namely, potatoes, yams, onions, peas, caravansas, etc., all of which are extremely fine, and taken in large quantities by the American whalers. The orange plantations also are thickly strewed about the neighbourhood; recently more attention is paid to the cultivation of them; new plantations are springing up in every direction; and a few more years will enable Fayal to compete with St. Michael's; in flavour the fruit is already quite equal to that of the last-mentioned place; and whether it arises from the superior character of the soil, or from any variation in climate I know not, but I observed a remarkable difference in all

the fruits in favour of this island; the bananas particularly seemed to flourish more luxuriantly; were finer and richer; facts we had on this occasion a fair opportunity of estimating in a visit to a gentleman's quinta, celebrated for their production, as well as for an abundance of apricots; the latter being exclusively cultivated in Fayal, and in such large quantities as to afford supplies for the other islands; hence it is supposed that Fayal alone is favourable to their growth, an observation I have frequently heard made by the residents of the different islands, with respect to other plants or fruit trees peculiar to their own places of abode. This supposition, however, is founded on nothing more than that the several trials have not been made at all, or made with so wholesale a confidence in the genial nature of the climate, as to preclude all exercise of their own care and skill. Such is the case with the olive, which would, I am persuaded, prove of most luxuriant and profitable growth were proper attention paid to its propagation in the Azores, where the great desideratum for the culture of this fruit,—namely, a warm and equally temperate climate, is possessed in perfection: but because one or two specimens (perhaps with imperfect flowers) have been introduced without

bringing forth fruit—the species is, without further consideration, deemed unsuitable to the soil, and consequently neglected. Let some enterprising speculator make the experiment of a plantation, and I will not hesitate to say—from the little attention I have given to the subject—that a very short period would make him a handsome return for his outlay and trouble. The profits would be fourfold in comparison with those of the orange and lemon trees; and in case of successful culture, independently of the advantages it might procure to individuals, another valuable source of commercial industry would open to the public. Nor need this new agricultural pursuit in any way interfere with the actual profitableness of the orange plantations; there is no scarcity of land; for full three-fourths of this beautiful island lie uncultivated, and are wasting the richness of the soil in a wilderness of spontaneous productions,—a consideration that merits serious attention from the legislators of the mother country.

About a week after our arrival we were rendered uncomfortable by a spirit of disaffection and discontent that showed itself on board the frigate, in consequence of a want of proper clothing and bedding in the wet weather, now set in, which

produced considerable sickness amongst the crew. The Admiral, however, by his customary conciliating influence, soon allayed the bad feeling, made every effort to supply the wants of the men, and procured the use of the Sant' Antonio convent for a hospital, whither all the sick were immediately transferred, for more comfortable accommodation and better treatment.

The convent of Sant' Antonio was the first dissolved in this island, in consequence of an imprudent act of inimical feeling betrayed by the foolish monks towards the constitutional government, against whom they had recourse to their wonted crafts, publicly performing an act of bigotry suited, as they thought, to the feelings of those whom they wished to excite. They one day offered up prayers to their patron, Saint Antonio, to visit the islands with storms and rains, in order to avert the successful issue of the expedition, which originally was intended to sail about that period; but such weather did not arrive as opportunely as they anticipated, and as, indeed, is generally the case at that period of the year. Knowing, however, that the usual atmospheric change could not long delay, and in order to give additional proof of their saint's power, as well as of their own influence over him, they conveyed

his statue down in public procession to a neighbouring well, where, as a punishment for his dereliction, they submerged his saintship, and menaced further infliction were their entreaties not shortly attended to. This was too much, even for the old women and children attending this monkish ceremony; the former retired in disgust, whilst the latter ran away positively bellowing in ridicule of the barefaced craft of the knavish monks—who, in retaliation, closed up the well (which belonged to their convent), and thus deprived the neighbourhood of the further use of it. This circumstance put me in mind of a similar instance of ridiculous fanaticism, that occurred when I was in Naples, in January, 1820. During the revolution of that period, according to a police regulation, after seven o'clock in the evening the patrole seized every one found in the streets who could not give a satisfactory account of himself, and suspected persons were disposed of in a way suited to the reputation these patrole bore, which necessarily excited considerable alarm on many occasions, when any member of a family exceeded that hour before he returned home. During this era of public alarm, a marriage took place between one of the apprentices of my

tailor (who recounted the fact) and a lovely young black-eyed native of the Abruzzi. The bridegroom was, in consequence of the new regulation, obliged to return from his work earlier than the usual time, to the wild joy of his enthusiastic Theresina, who always looked for the hour with the anxiety and warmth peculiar to her country and her novel situation; one day, however, owing to a press of business in the shop, the master requested Giuseppe to remain an hour longer, promising, at the same time, that he would himself escort him home, and, in case of falling in with the patrole, give the necessary explanation. The youth of course directly acceded; and his prolonged absence gave rise to the following scene at his home, being part of his mother's house in a little street leading out of the Piazza del Mercato. Poor Theresina hearing the clock strike seven, started from her anxious reverie; her little heart took alarm at the non-arrival of her beloved Giuseppe (who had been hitherto so strictly punctual), and beat with a painful violence, only moderated by a flood of tears, with which her brilliant countenance became as if by magic suffused; her mother-in-law though equally alarmed, administered all the consolation in her power; but Theresina was

inconsolable, and after offering in vain prayers and vows to the tutelary saint* (which was the patron saint of the city) that stood enshrined in a corner of the room, she began to lose all power of exercising either the christian virtues or those of her tender sex; and, her otherwise fascinating expression now clouded by the frowns of angry despair, she wrested poor St. Januerius from his niche, and shaking him violently, exclaimed, "*Se non viene Giuseppe in un' mezz' ora, sicuramente ti mettrò nel pozzo.*" (If Giuseppe does not return in half an hour, I will certainly put you in the well.) This ebullition being made, she resumed her seat, anxiously watching the progress of the clock, and casting from time to time a malicious glance on the disgraced saint. The instant the half hour expired, she indignantly seized the image, screaming hysterically, as she bore him to the well, "*Ti punirò!*" At this important moment, Giuseppe's well-known tap was heard below, whereupon she exclaimed to her little idol, "*Oh! oh! briccone avevi paura dell'acqua, un' altra volta saprò come fare.*" (Oh! oh! you little

* It is the custom in Naples for all the lower orders to have, besides an image of the Virgin in their house, a tutelary saint, to whose influence they refer all the good or evil they experience, in reward or punishment for their conduct.

rogue, you were afraid of the water? I shall know how to act another time.)

The monasteries in these islands, as elsewhere, command, generally speaking, the most lovely prospects. From the terrace of the Carmelites' abode, as likewise from that of the ex-Jesuits' college a little beyond, a combination of the most interesting objects appear in one rich expansive scene. Had these establishments been continued, and confined to the pious purposes for which they were originally instituted, how admirably suited are their splendid positions for exciting and maturing holy meditation; for contemplating the Creator to whose service the inmates professed to devote their lives, and for looking "through nature up to nature's God."

Walking home one day with the Admiral, after his daily visit to the sick in the Sant' Antonio, we paused a short time at each of the before-mentioned places, to gaze on these enchanting prospects. The Carmelite building was under sentence of condemnation: and the poor friars seemed to look with dread at their fallen condition, and future fate. When expatiating to one venerable brother on the sublimity and grandeur of the scene, I observed him turn away with tears in his

eyes, for it called to mind, the short period only he was destined to enjoy it. Although a strong advocate for the abolition of these communities, I could not help sincerely sympathizing with the old man, as well as with other individual cases of disappointment and distress:—which however must always unavoidably accompany any great and sudden change of system.

The college of the ex-Jesuits is one of the most sumptuous edifices, that proud designing fraternity erected in the Western Islands. They raised it during the era of Philip's dominion; but its character has been altered, ever since the expulsion of the tribe by the Count d'Oeyras in 1766. Its cloisters are now become the town barracks; and the chapel, which in the days of jesuitical prosperity must have been a splendid fane, is converted into the mother church, or Cathedral of Horta. Immediately on entering the church, the Admiral, who is very popular with the Portuguese, was recognized: and a powerful organ, whose reverberation had scarcely ceased in the service of a mass, thundered forth the national anthem of Donna Maria. The compliment was sensibly appreciated and modestly acknowledged. In the afternoon we partook of the hospitalities of our English

landlord at his beautifully situated quinta, near the north end of the bay; and he being a resident merchant, and considerably engaged in the traffic of the island wines, I gained much interesting information respecting them, and was thus undeceived as to the place of growth of that wine, exported from thence, called Fayal. The Island of Fayal produces very little wine, and that of inferior quality; but the morgados of that island being the principal proprietors of the vineyards in Pico, the whole produce thereof is brought over in small boats to Horta, where it is mixed, qualified, and stored for sale, either on the spot, or in foreign markets. Hence it is called Fayal wine, the best quality of which fetches 60 dollars per pipe.

The Pico wine, in its original state, is dry and harsh; and the mode adopted by the merchants for the improvement of its flavor and quality is—after mixing it with such portions of St. George's wine and brandy (generally fifteen per cent of the latter,) as are suited to the taste of their different markets—to put it into long low buildings, encircled by flues,—which, when full, are hermetically sealed, and heated by sulphur fires to from 110 to 130 degrees of Fahrenheit, to which it is exposed four, five, or six months. Of course eva-

poration ensues to a great extent, and the casks are filled up again with wine, and brandy, *ad libitum*. This process considerably reduces its harsh taste, and imparts a softness—altogether so changing and improving the quality of the wine, that it has been consumed to a great extent in England, Russia, and America, under the appellation of Teneriffe. There is necessarily great variety in the species of grape cultivated, strength and flavour being derived as much from the aspect of the vineyard, as from the species of the plant.

Until the American whalers visited this port, its commercial activity principally arose from the wine trade: and it has been accustomed to export nearly twelve thousand pipes annually: the demand is, however, much reduced of late, and the trade consequently on the decline; but were the islands once to become peopled and prosperous, this trade, like every other, would thrive in a fourfold degree, even if confined to the purposes of home consumption. Of the manufactures of Fayal, nothing can be said in greater commendation than with respect to those of St. Michael's: for, excepting a little very common earthenware, and the coarse materials for clothing of the lower orders, made from wool, hemp and flax all their wares,

and objects of art and industry are imported from Europe. They make nevertheless an extremely neat, strong species of basket, in all forms and for all purposes: these are quite peculiar to Fayal, and constitute a cheap, as well as useful article.

If land were made purchaseable, and a liberal policy existed, such as to invite foreign industry and capital, I know not any place that presents a finer field for the exercise of English commercial or agricultural speculation than this island, possessing as it does, (and might do in still greater perfection) a convenient port with an incomparable soil, a most inviting climate and locality as a place of residence, and a facility of cheap living that would render persons in difficulty in their own country, comparatively opulent here. The climate of Fayal partakes of the same even temperature as that of the other islands, with the only difference, as already mentioned, of its liability to more frequent gusts and storms; and Horta, with very little labour, might be made as attractive to the eye internally as externally.

One disadvantage, however, attends this in common with all the towns and villages on the shores of Fayal and Pico:—namely, the water of their springs and wells is brackish, in consequence of

the porous character of the substratum, through which the sea water rapidly filters, thus mixing with the other species of fluid, and occasioning it to rise and fall with the tide, a phenomenon that is an object of curiosity and surprise to many by whom I have heard it remarked. This evil, however, is not without its remedy, since both islands possess excellent sources of pure water at short distances inland, from whence it could, with the greatest facility be conducted, by pipes, to any extent and to every part of the coasting towns. Colonel Fonseca proposed executing a plan of this kind, (had he continued longer in the government of the island) — namely, the conducting water from the pure abundant springs in the valley of Flamingos.

To this beautiful valley I one day made an excursion; and by way of exploring the spots which struck me as most attractive, wandered up the bend of a water-course from the west end of the city, to which my attention had been previously directed by Mr. Frederick Dabney. The ravine, though then almost dry, presented a scene of romantic and picturesque beauty, varying the character of its attractiveness at almost every turn

of the course. About half a mile up, the dell seems closed by a rough rocky barrier, over which the water, particularly after a fall of rain, precipitates itself violently, constituting an extremely interesting addition to the luxuriant vicinity. From hence, after scrambling a considerable distance in the same direction, and in the enjoyment of equally beautiful scenery, I crossed over to the original Flemish settlement; its appearance, at some little distance, is particularly pretty and bears the stamp of industry as well as of fertility, varying in character from any other part of the country, and more resembling a Swiss scene than one in the Western Islands." It consists of an extensive, rich, productive, plain interspersed with houses, which are externally all neat—and which, being white, produce on a sunny day a sparkling effect, as they stand dispersed about the valley. The inhabitants still bear traces of their Flemish progenitors, (being somewhat fair,) and retain their habits, as well as remnants of their dialect. They have inherited, likewise, a portion of industry, for their valley has continued from one age to another in superior cultivation, and now possesses a soil producing an annual succession of abundant crops that would astonish our English farmers. Be-

sides pulse of all sorts, pease, beans (French and common) calavancas, lupins, etc., and every variety of grain, with yams and potatoes, it abounds also in excellent fruits and extensive orange quintas: and were foreign settlers encouraged in this island, it would, I am sure, become a favorite spot for the establishment of constant residences. It is astonishing how rapidly a newly built house and plantation may, in this country, assume the luxuriant appearance of age. Two instances in the environs of Horta furnished me ocular demonstration of this fact—namely, the quinta of an English merchant, and another belonging to Mr. Dabney, at the back of the town: the first, scarcely in its third season, and the latter in its fourth—both abounding in trees, shrubs, and plants and flowers of all countries, whose flourishing growth could not be attained in England under ten or fifteen years.

The valley of Flamingos is well watered, and the neighbourhood produces excellent hemp and flax, which the natives work up into coarse materials for their own consumption. The most unpicturesque objects of this rich tract of country are the hedge-rows, which are formed of a large species of the cane reed, abounding in Fayal and

attaining the height of fifteen feet. This is employed also in thatching outbuildings, cottages, and farm houses. The costume of the men here is much in the same style as at St. Michael's; only the characteristic color of the woollen cloth is dark maroon and instead of the carapuço they wear a broad-brimmed common hat. The peasantry of Fayal are certainly the most quiet, industrious and hardy race of the Azores; they perform the heaviest labour for the most trifling sums, and in perfect good-humour and contentedness; provisions, of course, are excessively cheap, and this would render them comparatively independent of very hard labour, if they were not naturally disposed to industry. Civilization, I think, would proceed much more rapidly, and prosperity earlier diffuse its blessings here than at any of the other islands; the inhabitants, I am persuaded, would require very little stimulus to agricultural rivalry, and other speculative improvements, beyond the ability to possess land on such terms as would render it worth their while to expend labor and capital thereupon. I was surprised to see the immense quantity of lupins grown in the island; but I found, on inquiry, that these not only contributed to the nourishment of the earth and cattle

but that the lower orders consumed a large portion, besides considerable supplies sent to the Brazils. They are extremely rich and nutritive, and are eaten in various shapes—either as porridge or soup, or sometimes with oil and vinegar; being always however previously well steeped in brine, to withdraw the bitter flavor peculiar to them. With yams or potatoes, and a coarse bread from the Indian wheat — aided occasionally by fish or hog's flesh, they compose the principal subsistence of the labouring classes here; and if I might judge by the appearance of a robust, healthy-looking race, constitute a salutary diet. On the occasion of this visit I availed myself of an opportunity to taste the lupin, which I had before imagined (from its flavor to the palate in its raw state) must be a nauseous food in any form: but I was greatly deceived; for partaking, on the invitation of as interesting a family group as I ever saw, in a farmer's cottage, of their lupin porridge and yams, I made a perfectly delicious meal.—Extreme cleanliness either in person or domestic arrangement was not the characteristic that distinguished these: but there was an air of content—even of happiness—expressed in the countenances, not only of the father and mother, but also of a set of interesting

little urchins, which pleased us excessively: nothing seemed to excite their anxious hopes and wishes so much as the advantages they looked for through the approaching change and the benefits of the charter. I trust for their sakes, as well as the Azores in general, affairs in the mother country may so terminate as to fulfil all these expectations.

On the 23d May, the city of Horta was enlivened by the arrival of Don Pedro, who, after visiting Terceira, put into this place, to complete his estimate of the resources and readiness of the expedition. He was every where favorably received; for the inhabitants are sincere constitutionalists, and the ladies on this occasion seized an opportunity of manifesting their loyalty, and exercising their political influence, by presenting His Imperial Majesty with a rich silk bi-coloured constitutional ensign, of their own workmanship, which was, of course, most graciously received, and appreciated in full proportion to its merits. Don Pedro's stay, however, was not long; he sailed in the steamer, next day, for St. Michael's; and as the weather was growing more settled, we prepared to follow in the frigate. Previous to our departure, however, I took advantage of an opportunity I had

long anxiously waited for, to visit the celebrated caldeira. Unless in very fine clear weather, and with winds from the north or north-east, it is almost useless attempting an excursion thither;—the mountain-top being, at all other times, capped with clouds, and the interior so obscured by mist and vapour, as to render it impossible to distinguish any thing. As already observed, it is the crater of an extinct volcano,—the road to which, from Horta, is about ten miles, winding along a ridge of hills; from whence, as we were borne along at the tardy pace of our donkey steeds, we enjoyed a distant prospect of transcendant beauty: the rich plain of Flamingos, with its orange groves and verdant cornfields, lay beneath us on one side; and, on the other, the town and environs spangled with quintas and gardens, enlivened by the moving scene of boats and shipping in the bay and channel—whilst the towering barrier of Pico rose majestically in front, bounded by the blue expanse of ocean. An almost simultaneous expression of wonder and admiration caused the whole party to pause, whilst we contemplated the magnificence of this prospect; and, as we continued our journey, many plans, promises and proposals were made, to revisit the island at a future period, in order to

become more familiar with the beauties it possesses.

On arriving at the summit of the mountain, we consigned our animals to the care of the guides, and descended the crater on foot. The depth is nearly equal to the whole altitude of the mountain—the sides, which slope at a considerable angle, being richly clothed with underwood, evergreen shrubs, brambles, and wild flowers. The descent is fatiguing, the road being nothing else than a tortuous water-course, leading, in places, over projecting rocks and ravines, or down precipitous steeps, through almost impenetrable underwood:—the whole, however, is romantically wild and picturesque. The slope terminates in a contracted circular vale, in the centre whereof is a transparent lake, abounding in gold and silver fish, introduced there by a Portuguese gentleman, who many years ago whimsically built a cottage in the valley, and occasionally passed a few days there in the summer months. His love, however, for this isolated abode was not of long duration; and the habitation has now almost disappeared. At one end of the lake is a small conic monticule of volcanic scoriæ and cinders, with a small crater on the top, evidently produced by one of the last efforts of the volcano.

It is impossible to give the reader a just notion of so singular and engrossing a scene, spread out in this deep solitude!—The depth at which the valley lies, together with the narrowness of its dimensions, secures it from the passing storms above:—not a blast is heard, in fact, even during the most violent gales; not a breeze is felt; all is silent and motionless, except the voice of the visitor, which reverberates, in places, from side to side. A thousand sensations are excited by the contemplation of so novel a spectacle of nature; and although possessed of a certain wild beauty, its dead calm and unearthly silence grew ponderous to the imagination,—engendering within me, spite of my own endeavours, a gloominess of thought, which was only effectually dissipated by the social merriment of our party, as we assembled on a rugged platform, to distribute the articles of our provender. In consequence of the vapour wherein the valley is so frequently immersed, vegetation is extremely luxuriant, and supports an immense number of sheep constantly kept there.

Besides the numerous flocks of sheep bred in Fayal, the island abounds in fine cattle: the former are kept only for the sake of the wool, which is manufac-

tured into a coarse cloth, for home consumption; the latter are bred for exportation to Portugal and Madeira. The beef of Fayal and St. George's is celebrated as the finest and sweetest in the Western Islands. After gratifying our curiosity to satiety, we scrambled up the sides of the crater again, remounted our donkeys, and returned by a more abrupt descent to the town, along rough declivities, formed by the lava of preceding ages.

The geological character of Fayal differs slightly from that of the other islands; for although it contains large portions of pumice, tuff, and volcanic scoriæ, its lava is of a blue species, containing basaltic hornblende and olivine. The only eruption I can find recorded to have taken place in this island, is one in 1672, at a peak near the town of Praya, which discharged torrents of lava for many days, but did not occasion any serious injury.

Before taking leave of this island, I cannot help repeating how delighted I was with its general character; with the superior charms and attractions it seemed to possess over all the others I had visited; and with the intellectual sensations it

wrought within me unexperienced elsewhere. In point of locality, it certainly bears the palm : the advantages of its position are increased by its close connection with the two adjoining islands ; and it is rendered considerably more graceful by the contiguity of Pico, whose sublime form imposes an indescribable interest upon every spot in and about the island from whence it can be perceived. It abounds in picturesque scenery, which combines, in general, marine objects with inland, as well as with the above-mentioned giant features of the opposite island ; — thus offering invaluable opportunites to the draughtsman ; and I do not know that I have anywhere enjoyed nature's loveliness in such variety, such camelion-like alternation as here. The tame, unruffled tranquillity peculiar to more southern latitudes, exists not : for, notwithstanding its mild, delicious climate, the sudden storms and changes of weather to which it is peculiarly subject, give to the same scenes a diversity of character inconceivably grand and exciting. The time we spent here enabled me to view and become intimately familiar with this scenery under all aspects : sometimes lighted up by a bright sunny sky, with a placid serenity of

atmosphere that scarcely gave motion either to the glassy surface of the water, or to the foliage of the surrounding trees, shrubs, and flowers ; sometimes influenced by clouds and storms, which threw a constant play of light and shade over the verdant patchwork of the distant mountain and neighbouring grounds ; while, again, the angry elements would occasionally spread impenetrable gloom over land and sky, raising the ocean from a state of repose to one of frightful agitation, and awakening in the mind feelings of awe and veneration for the Author of such overwhelming movements !

The garden terrace belonging to the American Consul was a spot from which I frequently had opportunities of indulging those contemplations naturally engendered by objects so solemn and imposing ; contemplations, the intensity of which was often agreeably diverted and relieved by the cheerful notes of myriads of singing birds, which inhabit this in common with all the islands, and which everywhere seem to upraise their merry song, as if to express the happiness enjoyed by them in this benignant clime.

On the 25th the Consul's family gave a farewell ball to the officers of the squadron ; and, the day

afterwards, we all bade adieu to the island, none without regret, and many with an anxious desire to revisit, at some future period, its innumerable attractions, that seemed to hang like a spell around their fancy.

CHAPTER VII.

THE ISLAND OF PICO.

During our stay at Horta, we had the colossal form of this majestic-looking island not only constantly under observation, but within little more than half an hour's sail of us; and although there was no great inducement to go there, unless to ascend the peak, (which, at that period, was scarcely possible,) we made an occasional excursion across, in order to form an idea of its general character, as well as to witness the novel mode practised there of forming and working the vineyards. Its nearest shore was a little beyond three miles from the ship's anchorage; but, in consequence of the pure surrounding atmosphere, it scarcely appeared one-third the distance, and had

PICO.

a most imposing effect, rising, as it does, abruptly from the sea to a lofty pinnacle, which almost seems formed by nature as a watch-tower to guard the neighbouring islands.

Pico, first appropriated by Huerta, the colonist of Fayal, was not then, however, much appreciated, on account of its rocky, repulsive appearance. It was, consequently, but little frequented by the inhabitants of Fayal, who regarded with awe its volcanic character, and always designated it by the appellation of "the Peak," which name has been ever since continued by the Portuguese geographers.

It is of a longitudinal form; lying in nearly an E.S.E. and W.N.W. line, thirty-five miles in length, and eight in width at its western or broadest extremity: — the northern point, called Ponta Negrá, being in 38° 33′ north latitude, and 28° 33′ west longitude; and the southern, called Point Espartel, in 38° 26′ north, and 28° 36′ west; the easternmost point, called Calhagrosso, being in 38° 18′ north, and 27° 45′ west longitude. Its whole length is intersected by a high mountainous volcanic ridge, which terminates, at the west end, in the celebrated mountain and peak distinguishing the island, and the height whereof, according to

the nearest authenticated accounts, is 6,700 feet from the level of the sea.

This island contains 30,000 inhabitants, who, for the most part, are settled, as in all the rest, only round the shores, in three towns and canteen villages; namely, on the south side, Lagens, the capital, Riveiras, Calheta de Nesquim, and Ponta de Piedade; on the north, Ribereinha, Sancto Amaro, Prainha, the town of San Roque, Sant' Antonio, Santa Lugia, and Bandeiras; and on the west, the town of Magdelena Criaçãovelha, Candellaria, San Mattheo, San João, and Silveira. The whole coast is bordered by rugged unapproachable rocks, without a port or anchorage for a ship; and the only place I observed capable of giving shelter to very small craft is at Lagens, within a small cove, the entrance to which is between two reefs of rocks. In consequence of this inaccessible character, Pico carries on all its trade through the medium of Fayal, to the morgados of which, indeed, the greater portion of the landed property belongs.

Pico possesses the finest timber trees of the Azores, particularly the cedar and white yew; and abounds, amongst the rocky heights, in good pasturage, on which are bred large quantities of sheep

for the benefit of the wool worked by the natives into clothing for home consumption. They breed also fine cattle, and myriads of goats, which seem to run wild amongst the precipitous heights. The whole surface of the island is covered with rugged lava, rendering the greater portion unfit for agricultural purposes; what soil, however, it does possess, is rich, and produces an ample supply of grain and pulse for the consumption of the inhabitants, who likewise cultivate large quantities of fine vegetables, particularly of beautiful onions, which are disposed of to the American and other traders that frequent Fayal. The southern side of the island is the most fertile for arable purposes, (being best covered with soil,) and has a rich appearance from the sea, particularly about Lagens and the territory to the eastward, where the land is terraced up and apparently cultivated with peculiar care. Immediately in the vicinity of that town stands a noble-looking Franciscan convent; and the cottages there, as in fact throughout the island, add considerably to the distant pictorial effect, being all white, with bright cane-reed-thatched conic roofs, which, at a short distance, have the appearance of an encampment.

But the great article of produce peculiar to Pico

is wine—which annually amounts to nearly 25,000 casks, and, as I have before observed, is sent to Fayal for curing and exportation. The vine was introduced here about the end of the 16th century from Oporto, Lisbon, and Madeira, but not cultivated to its present extent until within the last fifty years, during which period the foreign consumption has been gradually increasing, but is now again on the decline—a circumstance, however, which will be remedied in proportion to the increase of prosperity in the Azores; and, if the government of the mother country will display any degree of wisdom in the legislation of this valuable colony, the wine trade may prove a stimulus to industry, and a considerable source both of public and private emolument.

The western territory of Pico presents the most rocky portion; and it is on the surface of these dry unfruitful-looking tracts of hard lava that the vine is planted, and appears luxuriantly to flourish. Where the lava is not in a sufficiently friable state, the plant is inserted into small fissures, which, if not already formed by nature, are made with heavy crow bars; a portion of soil is introduced with the plant, which serves to nourish it for two or three seasons, when it is renewed; while little walls of

lava are built up about six feet apart, to protect the plants from the sea weather, which gives during winter, to the whole extent through which they are cultivated (namely about one-fifth of the distance from the sea up the mountain), an unvaried aspect of gloomy-looking patch-work: but from the spring until October—when the entire grounds, as well as the walls, are enveloped by the rich foliage of the vine—an inconceivable richness of colouring succeeds, varied by a thousand shades and hues according to the state and progress of each season.

It seems difficult to account for the extraordinary luxuriance and fertility of these vineyards, situated as they are on an apparently barren surface; and I can only attribute it to the following causes: In the first place, their position is beautifully sheltered; secondly, their supply of humidity and heat is regular, the former being absorbed by the soil from the unceasing atmospheric supplies already alluded to, and the latter absorbed by the lava, which in the absence of the sun retains that genial warmth so essential to the tender nature of this plant; in the third place, there is a great quantity of decomposed volcanic matter taken up by evaporation, and largely distributed again over

the land, imparting to every species of vegetation its surprising fertilizing properties.

The best Pico wine is cultivated from the Madeira grape, in the neighbourhood of Magdelena, where also a quantity of good sweet wine is made, called by the Portuguese passado. It comes from the same grape; but, like the sweet wine of all countries, acquires its saccharine flavour by keeping the grapes until they become shrivelled or partially dried, before pressing them.

The proprietors and morgados have quintas on this shore of Pico, and generally come from Fayal to pass the season of the vintage here, particularly in the neighbourhood of Magdelena, which is the most attractive locality. Opposite the town, about three quarters of a mile from the shore, are two immense masses of red volcanic rock, called the Isles of Magdelena; they are bold all round; and between them and the shore is an anchorage, where Villa Flor lay with his Lilliputian expedition in 1830. It was from this place he boldly made his descent on Fayal, in contempt, as before remarked, of a fine corvette then lying almost within gun-shot of him.

The fruit in the neighbourhood of this town is

particularly fine, indeed the general luxuriance displayed on so rocky a soil becomes, to the stranger, quite an object of wonder. The lava too being of a very friable nature, large portions of land might, by labour, quickly be converted to the purposes of general cultivation.

The oleanders here, as at Fayal, assume a most splendid arborescent form; and the myrtles grow to such a height and size, that the natives extract their *tanin* from them for the preparation and cure of the leather consumed on the island.

The inhabitants of Pico are a harmless, well-disposed race, hardy and robust; and when they feel they have rational motives for industry will work excessively hard;—otherwise, like the Portuguese, they are generally disposed to indolence; and as in all countries little advanced in civilization, or moral intelligence, the men consign their wives to the most degrading and laborious occupations: I have oftentimes wondered at the enormous burdens the women are in the habit of carrying on their heads, grieving, at the same time, to see the female sex under a christian government reduced to such a condition; indeed the women at this island are positive slaves, and by hard labour soon become decrepid and infirm. The costume of the men is

similar to that of Fayal, (with the exception of the hat—which, like their native Peak, is in the form of a high cone ;) and they wear high gaiters (without stockings) or sandals, which are generally of raw hide. When they come over to sell their goods at Horta, they have a wild semi-barbarous appearance, with an air of distrust, as if dealing with people to whom they are alien. They are, generally speaking, good fishermen, and frequently bring to Horta beautiful branches of coral, which they find round the coasts of their island.

Notwithstanding Pico has been the monument of a continued series of eruptions, from the original uplifting of the Azores out of the depth of the ocean to within the last century, only three or four are recorded by the Portuguese writers as having occurred subsequent to the discovery of this Archipelago: namely, one in 1572, which broke out at the eastern part of the mountainous chain, from which the fiery liquid ran six miles to the sea near Prainha; two more in the same century, which discharged burning torrents, one on the north coast near Bardeira, the other on the south near San Matheo; and the last violent one in 1718; which burst from the west side of the peak, and overwhelmed a large portion of the best vineyards.

But although these only are noticed, the general character and appearance of the mountains announce that many and very frequent shocks must have occurred within the last three hundred years. Like those of Ætna, the sides of this mountain are covered with monticules, (which are the craters of former eruptions,) composed of loose slag lava and scoriæ, now clothed more or less with vegetation, in proportion to their several ages. I was extremely anxious to have taken this opportunity of exploring the whole of this majestic feature of the Azores, particularly the crater; but although I had ascended other and higher volcanic mountains in the depth of winter, I was told that the road to the summit of this was quite inaccessible until June,—an assurance to which I felt obliged to yield. However, so far as a perfect knowledge of its details can be obtained, without ocular demonstration, I gained such knowledge from the intelligent delineations of the Consul's brother, who had, the preceding season, made the excursion, and examined every part of it from the apex to the base.

From the sea to the actual base of the mountain, and about one third higher, the land, as I have already observed, is richly cultivated princi-

pally with vineyards, but is also abounding with patches of gardens, orange groves, and plantations, wherever the land is found in a sufficiently friable state to prove available for such purposes. From thence, up an abrupt acclivity, to within a third of the distance from the summit, it is thickly covered with splendid cedars, the myrica faya, the white yew, immense junipers, myrtles, the tree fern etc., beyond which point, vegetation begins to decline, and, on approaching the top, nothing is seen but moss and lichens of various species and hues.

At the apex of this mountain there is a crater about two hundred feet deep, whose mural sides render it only accessible on the N.E. where there is an opening. Like the crater of Etna all is dark and gloomy within, being covered with grimy looking black lava; but the peculiar feature distinguishing this from almost every other volcano, is the pyramidal cone which rises from the centre of its crater to a height of two hundred feet *above it*, and forms that apparently superposed sugar-loaf peak* which renders Pico so recognisable at the first glance at a very considerable distance. This

* The peak of Pico may be seen about eighty miles in clear weather.

little cone is composed of loose black cinders over lava; it has also a crater, about twenty feet diameter and fifteen deep—from whence, as well as from other parts of the great crater strong sulphuerous exhalations are frequently emitted, assuming the appearance of smoke, sometimes so dense as to lead the inhabitants to expect an eruption.

In consequence of the rocky protuberances and volcanic surface on every side of the mountain, the road to the summit is difficult and fatiguing at all times — leading through water gullies and ravines, over precipices, and through tracts of briars and underwood; but in winter it becomes positively inaccessible, on account of the peak being to one third of the elevation from the summit enveloped in snow, which, in melting, renders the regions underneath impassable. The snow lies on the mountain nearly eight months in the year; and as it gradually melts, furnishes supplies of water to the surrounding territories, giving increased fertility to the lava soil, and more rapidly decomposing that which is not already cultivatable. The journey to the summit and back has generally taken travellers twenty-four hours, they sleeping at the cavern situated about half way. However, I think there is no doubt but it may be

accomplished within day-light hours in the month of June, July, August, or September, reposing a short time for refreshment at the small hamlet of Guindaste, from whence it is nine miles to the crater.

On the east side of the mountain, about 3,000 feet from the level of the sea, is a transparent lake nearly four miles in circumference, the neighbourhood of which abounds in quails : and at the base of the ascent may be seen issuing, from a rocky bason, a spring of boiling water perfectly pure and I believe unmingled with mineral ingredients.

Few objects can be altogether more interesting or beautiful than this mountain—either to the mariner, as he first descries it or sails immediately beneath its coasts,—or to the general observer, whether he contemplates it arrayed in the riches of its summer garb or enveloped in the austerity of wintry gloom.

At a distance its form is remarkably curious, and when distinguished in fine weather from afar off, it appears like an isolated cone in the midst of the ocean, tipped on the apex with a clearly defined pyramid. In summer its variegated verdure and luxuriant vegetation render it extremely fascinating, while in winter it is splendidly im-

posing and sublime, by reason of its dark severe looking features and majestic form. Its peak answers the purposes of a never-failing barometer to all who have it in view. On the approach of bad weather a fleecy cloud forms, and hangs thereupon a little below the summit. This is a sure indication of change; and so long as it remains, the weather is never known to be settled; this cloud will increase in proportion to the coming storms, until it entirely obscures more or less of the upper part of the mountain; and vice versa, the return of fine weather is naturally indicated by the gradual clearing of the mountain until the total disappearance of the white cloud—or, as the residents call it "the Cap," in the absence of which fine settled weather may always be calculated on with certainty.

The Azores in general abound more or less in a valuable moss, called by the Portuguese urzella; and as it is one of the profitable productions of the island of Pico, I will take this opportunity of noticing its character and history, which may not be uninteresting to the generality of my readers.

It belongs to the genus "lichenes fructiculosi" of Linnæus, and has been identified with the plant described by Theophrastus, Dioscorides, and

Pliny, under the name of Phycos thalassion, which was found abundantly in the shores of the Levant, and yielded those valuable dyes used both by the Greeks and Romans. It was first brought from the Levant to Italy at the commencement of the fourteenth century by a Florentine merchant, who imparted to the manufacturers of his native town, the splendid purple and scarlet dyes it furnished; and gave it the name of Pianta Rocello, or rock plant, in allusion to the place of its growth. It was no sooner known than appreciated by the Florentine dyers, and the consumption became so extensive that the above-named merchant rapidly realized an immense fortune, which elevated him to an eminent position in society, and gave rise to a powerful opulent race at an interesting epoch of that growing republic. The family, on being subsequently ennobled, was distinguished by the title of Roccellaria. At a later period, when the use of this plant became generally known in Europe, it was discovered to exist in the Canarys, the Cape de Verds, at the Cape of Good Hope and more recently at the Azores. The species is now distinguished by the Italian cognomen, hence recognised in the Linnæan nomenclature by the name of Lichen rocella. It is a light-greenish-grey

colored moss, that grows on rocks and walls, and in these islands is found exclusively on their northern sides. By the laws of Portugal it has always been appropriated to the crown, producing a large revenue, which was set apart for the Queen's pin-money. A sum equal to twopence half-penny per pound was given for the collection of it by the government, who then sold it to the merchants at a shilling for exportation. Some change however, I believe, has taken place respecting this law, and the sale of it has been recently made public. The best species is found to be that of the Cape Verds, and of these islands, and it has of late years become a great article of trade both in England and France, where practical chymistry can better and more effectually employ its virtues than elsewhere. The plant, after being well rubbed or ground to a powder, is moistened with urine and made into a sort of paste, which is mixed with quicklime and alkalies of different kinds, to produce blue or purple dyes, or with a solution of tin when it yields a beautiful rich durable scarlet. In this form it is known in trade by the name of argol or archil, and is sold at a high price: another article much employed by dyers, called litmus, is a preparation from it, considerably cheaper but very inferior: and in consequence of

the high price of archil, it is frequently waived in favor of another variety of the moss called lichen tartareus, found on the northern shores of England; but the dye extracted from this is neither so strong nor so permanent.

With respect to the political history of this island, its interests and fortunes, they are the same and have always been identified with those of Fayal, whose proprietors and morgados are principally the lords of its soil.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE ISLAND OF CORVO.

THE two islands of Corvo and Flores, though separated from the central group of the Azores by so great a distance, are, notwithstanding, evidently integral parts of the same volcanic chain, and the produce of the same revolutions that have upheaved the others above the surface of the ocean.

During our visit, on this occasion, to the Archipelago, we had no communication with them; no circumstances then impelled our attention into that channel; and they were consequently left for investigation at a future period. I had, it is true, seen them many years before; independent of which, through the medium of some Portuguese traffickers, who had been in the habit of frequenting them from Fayal, I obtained sufficient information to give me a just idea of their local character.

Corvo is the smallest, and most northerly* of the Azores, being only six miles in length, and three in breadth, with a population of nine hundred souls. It is rocky and mountainous; and, on being first descried, exhibits a sombre dark-blue appearance, which circumstances gave rise to its present name, whereby it was distinguished by the early Portuguese navigators. Corvo is rendered extremely remarkable by having a high mount at each end, which two, viewed from the N. E. or S. W. appear in the form of a saddle. Like its sister isle, it is extremely fertile, and subject to precisely the same peculiarities of climate and temperature. The inhabitants are small in stature, and are the poorest and most miserable-looking among the Western Islanders. They raise a quantity of very small cattle, an abundance of sheep, goats, and poultry, besides a large portion of lichen rocella, of Indian corn, wheat, and pulse, which, however, is almost all sent to the mother country, to pay rent to the lords of the soil. The island is bold all round, without a port of any sort, but has good anchorages, one on the east, another on the west side, the latter of which, called

* The northermost point is called Ponta das Turrais, in 39° 45′ north, and 31° 7′ west.

Porto de Casa, is the best, and lies in lat. 39°. 44′ north, and 31° 2′ west longitude: there is also good anchorage between Points Pasquiero and Blanco to the W.N.W. of a little islet, with good holding-ground, in 30 fathoms, and sandy bottom.

It is not known at what period this island was first visited, though from a combination of circumstances, it is supposed, about the year 1460. The inhabitants are ignorant, superstitious, and bigoted, in the highest degree, and relate innumerable ridiculous traditions respecting their country. Amongst other absurdities they state, with the utmost gravity, that to Corvo is owed the discovery of the western world—which, they say, originated through the circumstance of a large projecting promontory on the N.W. side of the island, possessing somewhat of the form of a human being, with an outstretched arm towards the west; and this, they have been led to believe, was intended by Providence, to intimate the existence of the new world. Columbus, they say, first interpreted it thus; and was here inspired with the desire to commence his great researches.

The island is perfectly free from the appearance of any recent volcanic operations; indeed, nothing of the kind is known or recorded, and the land is every

where susceptible, like that of the other islands (though, like them, neglected) of conversion to a most productive state. For, although, in consequence of its want of harbour accommodation and great distance from the other islands, it never could attain a high mercantile character,— nevertheless, by industry, its fruitful soil might be rendered a source of profit to the public treasury. Besides which, every territory, however insignificant or unproductive, is, I think, in justice and humanity, entitled to an equal share of attention and protection from the government that appropriated, and still continues to claim it.

CHAPTER IX.

THE ISLAND OF FLORES.

THE island of Flores is, amongst these, the most westerly one; its extreme point, called Ponta Fanaes, being in 31° 12′ west longitude from Greenwich. It is fifteen miles long, and nine broad, with the small islet of Monchique on the N.W. side, and that of Roderigues on the S.E. surrounded by a rocky coast, from which an undulating succession of rich looking little hills gradually arises, and terminates towards the centre in a remarkably pointed lofty peak.* The lava soil of this island, as well as of Corvo, is in a more friable decomposed state than any of the others, which gives to it the greatest richness and fertility imaginable: the hill tops abound in excellent pasture and woodland, whilst

* This peak is richly wooded, and contains, at its summit, a crater resembling that of Fayal, though on a much smaller scale.

the slopes are covered with walled enclosures, formed of lava and pumice-stone, within which are produced luxuriant crops of Indian corn, barley, pulse, yams, potatoes, and other vegetables. It is extremely abundant also in fine timber, and occasionally supplies the demands of the ship-yards at Fayal with cedars, the myrica faya, the white yew, etc. It is remarkable also for the vigor and beauty of the American plants—the laurel, the lauristinus, box, myrtle, juniper, ferns, etc., besides a spontaneous profusion of wild flowers and herbs, which caused the first colonists to distinguish it by its present appellation. The climate is salubrious and delightful, though differing considerably from that of the group to the eastward; it is entirely free from those vapours that so peculiarize them; and, indeed, possesses so dry an atmosphere, that the destructive effects of oxidation and mouldiness are scarcely known here. It abounds in springs (one or two of sulphur), and is well watered on every side by streams that flow from the mountains; which, in addition to the frequent passing showers whereto it is subject the whole year round, imparts a freshness and luxuriance to the vegetation, that gives it a most attractive appearance from the sea. It produces few oranges, and indeed very little fruit of any spe-

cies; but furnishes a larger portion of the *lichen rocella* than any other island. In consequence of its rich pasture, it raises excellent (though smaller than Alderney) cattle, sheep, and goats, which, with hogs, are sent over in large quantities to the landlords in Portugal.

Very little seems to be known about the precise period of the discovery and colonization of these two westerly islands. We have, however, sufficient authority to state, that the Flemish colonist of St. George's (Guilherme Van Deraga) first peopled them; and from this, and other concurring circumstances, we may infer, that the discovery must have happened about 1460.

Flores is only ten miles distant from Corvo—with a clear open passage between, for vessels of any size. It is bold all round, with good anchorage almost on every side—which, added to the abundance of provisions for which it is celebrated, and the facility it affords of supplying excellent water, renders it a place of resort for homeward-bound vessels to Europe to replenish their stock in cases of emergency.

The population of Flores is about 9,000, or now somewhat less, in consequence of a great emigration to the Brazils that occurred a few years back.

They are of low stature, but fairer than the natives of the more easterly islands, and considerably more enterprizing than any. They are good sailors, and frequently embark in the American whalers that come to fish in the neighbouring seas.

Flores has two towns—namely, Santa Cruz (the capital) and Lagens: and four villages, Cedros, Ponta Delgada, Fajazinha and Lomba. The two former are situated on the east coast, distant from each other two leagues. Santa Cruz, which is the northermost, in lat. 39° 32′ north and long. 31° 5′ west, stands on a low part of the coast, with a high abrupt hill rising immediately from behind. The latter is richly cultivated, the summit being thickly overgrown with juniper, and crowned with the ruins of an old tower. The town, which contains nearly 3,000 inhabitants, is composed of three streets running parallel to each other from the sea, bounded by a fourth that runs at right angles S.E. and N.W. The houses are strongly built of stone, generally of two stories, with a heavy rude-looking balcony, enclosed with Venetian blinds in the Moorish style. It has one of the most lofty spacious churches in the Western Islands; capable of accommodating nearly half the population of Flores. This has originally been a sumptuous

fabric, but time and neglect have considerably defaced it, and the grass may now be seen shooting up in luxuriant tufts along its deserted aisles. A Franciscan monastery of considerable dimensions occupies, in better preservation and condition, a neighbouring commanding site;—its day of prosperity however is now also past.

Santa Cruz has no port; and the anchorage, which is between the island of Alvaro Róderigues and the town, is rocky and dangerous; it is also badly defended, having merely an old fort at the S.E. end—which, although it stands in a commanding position on the summit of a rock over the sea, is rendered unserviceable by dilapidation.

Santa Cruz is distant from Fayal 38 leagues. The inhabitants however of this island or of Corvo have very little communication with the rest of the Azores; they live, as it were, unconscious of the existence of the other islands, and almost without the knowledge of any other government than their own local authorities.

This island like Corvo has, since its discovery, never been subject to volcanic eruptions or earthquake; but its neighbourhood is almost at all periods of the year exposed to violent storms, and sudden squally weather with tremendous showers

of rain. The changes from the extreme of fine to that of foul weather are rapid beyond conception, and require the constant vigilance of a navigator, particularly in the winter season. These atmospheric transitions, in addition to causes already suggested, are sometimes induced by the approach of immense icebergs, which are frequently brought into the neighbourhood by the Florida stream; and unless vessels require to touch at the Azores for provisions, water, or any other important object, I think (from what I have observed and learnt) I may venture to state they will invariably make a better passage by avoiding them altogether—keeping well to the N.W. of the group.

The Florida stream, on approaching Flores and Corvo, divides itself into two branches—one striking off to the north of Corvo, and the other to the south of Flores—each afterwards taking a S.E. direction, and ultimately reuniting at a short distance from the coast.

CHAPTER X.

CONCLUSION.

The foregoing rough sketch of the Azores will serve to prove that they are not mere barren rocks in the middle of the ocean, incapable of culture and productive of no useful purposes to the state to which they belong. No! the reader will perceive that they possess advantages and qualities which claim a better fate than they have ever experienced at the hands of the Portuguese government; and that they contain resources within themselves sufficient to ensure their future greatness, and to render them a valuable colony,—if the parent state will only cease to be indifferent to their mutual welfare, and for the future direct those resources with justice and wisdom.

Colonies are a most desirable acquisition to any country, and a blessing to those that know how to profit by their advantages, which may be classed under the following heads: - 1st. They form an outlet for an overflowing population.—2nd. For the employment of a superabundant capital.—3rd. For the acquirement of additional means of subsistence through their agricultural produce.—4th. They offer means of extending the home trade, and giving a general stimulus to internal as well as external commerce.

Portugal, however, stands in no need of new countries for the employment of her still scanty population. Blessed as she is with a splendid climate, and enjoying all the benefits of soil as regards both quality and quantity, she requires not the agricultural aid of foreign lands to support her people: she can stimulate and more profitably retain the industry of her inhabitants within her own sphere, by encouraging the cultivation of those boundless tracts of beautiful land now lying in melancholy waste. Neither is Portugal inconvenienced by a superabundant capital, yearning for an opportunity to develop its uses. But she wants all means and measures calculated to stimulate commercial activity both at home and

abroad; activity which, by rousing her people to habits of industry, would contribute new sources of wealth to her almost exhausted treasury.

Colonies are admirably adapted for the encouragement of home manufactures and extension of home trade; for, if rightly viewed, they ought to be considered as integral parts of the parent state, between which and them a reciprocity of commerce may be always established, beneficial to both; consequently, they are entitled to an equal share of the protection of government in the consideration of their welfare or aggrandizement. If however, Portugal, in consequence of her actual circumstances and condition, is unable to supply that aid requisite for the interests of the Azores, let her encourage the industry, and invite the talent and capital of foreigners, so to do. This proposition I frequently suggested to individuals of that nation; who, invariably, I regret to say repelled the idea, and, on the system of the dog in the manger, objected to yield any portion of their advantages to foreigners, notwithstanding the consciousness of their own inability. Every intelligent Portuguese, however, after reviewing the facts, will I am sure feel the elegibility of such a plan. Some most able writers have shewn the absurdity of

permitting a spirit of jealousy to exclude or limit the influence of foreigners by narrow injudicious restrictions, unless the parent state can do without them, and herself supply the advantages they may bring; in which case she would be justified in the system of exclusion; but otherwise, if strangers will bring genius, riches and industry, what matters it of what nation or color they be—whether English, French, American, New Zealander, Hottentot, or Moor? They *must* be in equal subjection to the parent state as the natives, so long as that state shall retain the right of legislation, the imposition of taxes, and the appointment of civil, military and ecclesiastical offices.

Let Portugal, therefore, under the influence of her regenerating charter, wisely adopt such laws and generous policy for the amelioration of this valuable cluster of islands as are requisite, and she will open for herself, in a few years, a fountain from whence she will be able to draw the most valuable sources of commercial activity, and, by these means, give a vigorous stimulus to industry at home. She must, however, commence by removing that gigantic barrier, the law of primogeniture, and make land saleable to those who will cultivate and improve it. The almost immediate

effect of this measure would be, an increased population, agricultural improvement, and ultimately the growth of commerce, with all its concomitant train of blessings.

She must appoint as governors (with a ratio of pay that will keep them above the seductions of peculation), upright, intelligent men, who will never lose sight of the interest of their country, but unceasingly pursue every measure that seems likely to improve the islands, or tend to increase the public weal; and the first object of amendment that occupies their attention, ought to be, the forming roads of communication between the different points of the country—the great importance of which, by the bye, is scarce sufficiently considered in any part of the world.

I conceive, indeed, the establishment of good practicable roads, to be the first and most essential step towards the civilization of any state; as necessary to the prosperity of internal, as good shipping is to that of external commerce. The fertility of a country—its productions, agricultural or manufactured, are only of value in proportion to the demand, and the facility with which they can find a market to supply that demand; while, however far that market may be, the sense of dis-

tance is greatly diminished by facilities of conveyance, either by sea or land.

Good roads, and vehicles suited to them for the conveyance of goods or of persons, necessarily enhance the value of produce in the neighbourhood of all those countries through which they pass. In these islands, each governor might, with ease, accomplish the desired object by employment of the military under his command, and of the hundreds of poor wretches now lingering in idleness and want. There are likewise excellent materials in every island; and, from the general character of the soil, the thing might be executed without difficulty, and at a trifling expense, which the advantages accruing would rapidly redeem. The circumstance alone of rendering the sites of the different mineral springs easy of access, would create an influx of population and capital sufficient to establish prosperity; a suggestion which one day called forth, however, the following *sagacious* remark from an eminent individual:—"What! convert the island to an hospital, and depend for its prosperity on the influx of invalids?" His question is best answered by a reference to history, which teaches us, that splendid towns and cities have risen up through the same medium, in

ancient as well as modern days, as we may witness in our own country—Bath, Cheltenham, Harrowgate, etc.

The next important object in demand is, the influence of government in the establishment of harbours, particularly at those places I have alluded to in the course of the present work; and this it requires little penetration to perceive would mainly tend to the aggrandizement of the Azores, rendering them, in a short period, a central mart for the commerce of the whole northern hemisphere, and consequently a vigorous artery, through which strength and opulence would flow to the mother country.

Let her also encourage her own subjects to take advantage of the profitable whale fishery in the vicinity of these islands, instead of permitting foreigners to monopolize and reap all the valuable fruits thereof; it would then become an excellent nursery for her seamen, and an additional support to her shipping interests.

Should wholesome measures, such as the above, be adopted by the future legislators of Portugal, in the government of these islands, the following results must, I think, inevitably follow:—namely, immense numbers of English (exclusive of many

other foreigners) would immediately flock out; some for the benefit of the delightful climate and beautiful country; some on account of their narrowed circumstances, which there would enable them to live in comfort—even in luxury; others, again, for agricultural or commercial speculation, which would of necessity call into play the exercise of industry and talent, in the various arts necessary to their purposes; whilst capital would become largely circulated, and employment be given to the labouring classes. By degrees, all the land would be occupied, either taken on long leases or purchases, and, in a few years, every portion of it would be cultivated with various productions. For instance, independent of the raising of grain and pulse, the cultivation of the olive-tree would ensue, which would prove a source of profit, both to the grower and the government; the plantation of the white mulberry, and the raising of silk-worms, would be added to the pursuits of horticulture, arboriculture, and the rearing of the vine.

Nor would speculators be wanting, to employ their capital in erecting accommodations at the sites of the different valuable mineral springs, and in rendering them places of attraction for the curious, as well as the sick and infirm. The ports

would become crowded with shipping; and traffic in general, if wisely regulated here, give an impulse to the maritime interests of Portugal at large—namely, by making the Azores a nursery for seamen, whilst then avy of the mother-country might be employed in watching and protecting the interests of the islands.

Increase of population would necessarily bring with it a proportional demand for the useful articles of life, and a consequent influx of artisans from every country, who would compete in the supply, and thus (as in every other improving state) gradually produce perfection in all the various branches of manufacturing art. The growing population would also augment the consumption of wine; and, if properly protected by government, the wine trade of the island must necessarily spring into great importance.

The different islands, also, would no longer be to each other like distant and strange provinces. The general use of steam vessels, and their application here, would bring the islands, as it were, into close and constant communion, like the neighbouring counties of any other state; and at the same time remove the sense of their remoteness from Portugal, and Europe in general.

Such are the Azores:—to the commonwealth of European nations, including their parent state, a *terra incognita:*—a mine of wealth, not undiscovered indeed, but unworked. The reader, I trust, has felt an interest in the attempts made, throughout this volume, to place before his imagination the advantages of climate, of soil, of position, which these islands possess and display. He has, it is hoped, given fair play to his fancy; and suffered that discursive faculty to lead him to the vineyards, the orange-groves, the corn-fields of these overlooked and undervalued regions; to lift him to the summit of Pico, and escort him over the plains strewed with the lava resulting from volcanic eruption.

The object, however, is to excite not only *curiosity*, but *consideration*. It is far from my wish to elevate the picturesque, in this sketch, above the profitable. I claim, for the Azores, that degree of attention and patronage which should, in fairness, be awarded to colonies calculated, alike from their locality, produce, and inhabitants, to become of high and permanent value.

Ere finally closing the subject, I cannot help renewing that earnest exhortation, so repeatedly given in these pages to the Portuguese government,

to cast aside their unpardonable apathy, and, at once for their own sake and that of the colonists, to rescue these beautiful and fertile spots, so beneficently uplifted out of the ocean waste, from their present degraded and, comparatively, unimportant state. Then shall some future traveller or historian, in treating of the Western Islands, relate, as in actual existence, those triumphs and glories which can now only be adverted to by anticipation; and the prosperous condition of the Azores shall realize that brilliant dream, which the individual, now laying down his pen, weaves with fond and cherished confidence.

END.

APPENDIX.

APPENDIX

I HAD really considered it quite supererogatory to notice such a work as that of Captain Mins,—a composition the very nature of which renders it too contemptible for reply,—since it amounts to nothing else than a rhapsody of self-commendation, varied only (*dans le langage des halles*) by a tirade of malignant abuse and slander against Admiral Sartorius and myself.

I was in hopes that, for his own sake, Captain Mins would have been contented with quiet retirement into the obscurity he merits. *Mais c'est fait de lui*; *Litera scripta manet*; and his production will *remain*, however little *noticed*, a specimen of that peculiar *refinement of principle and feeling* so remarkably characterising himself and the *fidus Achates*, who *sub rosa* advised and assisted him.

However, certain erroneous impressions having been made by his grossly false statements, and gained ground from want of refutation, I now deem it necessary to make the few following comments. Be it understood that I confine myself chiefly to his imputations; for general recrimination I have no taste; and

indeed, were I to indulge much therein, more time might be expended than I choose to devote to such a subject.

To the pure disinterested zeal evinced in the cause of suffering Portugal by Admiral Sartorius, as well as to the equally honest, the unparalleled exertions of Mr. Mendizabel,* are decidedly owing the means of raising the constitutional expedition from its fragile embryo elements; of forwarding it in spite of innumerable interposed obstacles to the Azores; and consequently the ultimate success that must now inevitably crown the cause of legitimacy and of constitutional freedom in Portugal, and probably the entire Peninsula. As a compensation for the risk of losing their English commissions, it was stipulated that the Admiral, and his appointed second in command, Captain Mins, were to receive each an advanced sum—the first of £10,000, the second of £5,000—for their services. It was found, however, that the pecuniary resources of the agents could not possibly admit of this advance; and that if insisted on, the plan of the expedition must be crushed, and the hopes of relieving Portugal abandoned. Admiral Sartorius, therefore, without hesitation generously yielded his claims, and answered for his second following his example: but this unwarily given pledge inflicted a grievous disappointment upon the man

* To Mr. Mendizabel I do not hesitate to say, regenerated Portugal will owe an unredeemable debt. His great physical and mental exertions, in furthering the plans of the expedition, in raising ways and means, in furnishing supplies, in planning resources during moments of difficulty, were unceasing and unmitigated. He was in London, Paris, the Azores, Oporto—wherever his presence was useful or requisite—without a murmur or complaint of fatigue, after successive days travelling without repose. He had to combat all the difficulties in London, as well opposition from creditors and claimants of all sorts as obstacles interposed by Miguelite influence, &c.

whose divinity was gold, whose ruling passion, riches!—It produced, in fact, all the rancour and defamation that Captain Peter has resorted to during the whole course of his service in the expedition, and which he has followed up since his arrival in England.

Some persons say, the Admiral had no right to answer for Captain Mins, whatever he chose to do with respect to himself. The truth is, he *then* gave his second credit for some liberality of sentiment and honorable feeling; besides which, had Captain Mins *not* consented, what would have been the result? he must have withdrawn his services, which, under such circumstances, would necessarily have been declined. Captain Mins also had the option of serving or not on the terms proposed by the Admiral; and which if he thought so grievously unjust, why did he continue? why did he leave London? there was ample time for him to withdraw from the service before he had incurred either risk or expense, even before his name was known as forming one of the party.

But he still looked forward to realize (according to his own calculation) at least £20,000 during the expedition, together with many *other advantages*, the idea of which his morbid ambition had conjured up. He therefore continued to cling to his new commission, though bereft of a portion of its principal charm. Let this pass, however, together with his ingratitude to the Admiral, who is himself about to render an explanation of these matters; and let me reply to those points alone which he has in his work raked up, or invented, for the unaccountable purpose of wounding my feelings and reputation.

He first mentions me by magnanimously and honorably quoting a portion of my *private* letter to him (page 49) when off Madeira;

written, as every person of common discrimination will perceive, quite *en badinage* and in a tone of the most confidential familiarity, and alluding to the pointed neglect and contempt with which our countrymen and the squadron were certainly at that time treated by individuals in power. There was no possibility of my thus doing injury either to the public service or to any private person; indeed, my only object was for the benefit of the service; namely, to re-establish harmony. This quotation by him, therefore, cannot be palliated in any way. It was neither necessary to prove Captain Mins's case; still less could it prove *treachery*, (as he terms it,) or a breach of confidence on my part. No! but it answers the gallant Captain's purpose of revenge—by such means endeavouring to make out a plan formed in conjunction between me and the Admiral, to prejudice the cause; thus injuring us both in the estimation of the Portuguese government.

Secondly, Captain Mins has the following passage (page 69). "It will be hereafter seen that he (Admiral Sartorius) did not scruple to bring an officer to a court-martial on a charge of his having used language disrespectful towards himself, on no stronger ground than that of Captain Boid having *naturally let out*, in the course of conversation with him, that he had been *listening* to a *private conversation* between two gentlemen, and had overheard one of them (Captain Rose) make use of an offensive expression." All this, I beg to say, is grossly false; a calumnious invention, so put as to call forth the indignation of the public against me, by making me appear a listener and a tale bearer. In the first place, I know that the principal cause which led to that court-martial, was Captain Rose's refusal to take command of the Villa Flor; on which determination being made known, the

Admiral, much incensed, observed to me, "I really must try that man by a court-martial for refusing to take command of a vessel in a moment of danger, and on an important occasion like this, as well as for his insulting and contemptuous conduct towards me; these and other charges I shall bring against him." This was the general tenor of his remarks at that time; and in the course of conversation, he stated he should require me to be a witness. Now I have an objection to take part in any thing of the kind, and Captain Rose knows I did all I could to prevent that court-martial; that I urged his most intimate friend, the late Captain George, to exercise his influence in inducing him to conciliate the Admiral:—Independently of which, I also used my endevaours to dissuade Admiral Sartorius, who however stated that, in justice to the service, he was bound to pursue the course he had resolved on; and I can most conscientiously assert, that when the court-martial did take place, I strictly confined myself to that testimony for which I was *expressly arraigned* by the Admiral; that, instead of *naturally letting out*, in the course of conversation (as Captain Mins asserts), the disrespectful expressions I *overheard*, those expressions were in fact made in so vehement a tone, as to create quite a sensation throughout the room; *all present*, who understood English, must have heard; and the Admiral, who was at the farther end of the room, having *plainly* heard it, expressed to me, after the party, his indignation at such conduct—"which," added he, "I am quite at a loss to account for, having invariably shewn that officer courtesy and kindness." Nevertheless, it was not noticed by the Admiral until the above occasion.

Captain Mins next endeavours to bring on me contempt and disrepute—ay, and to attach the stain of perjury to my name—

by repeating an expression used by Major Shaw, relative to the other portion of my evidence, namely, "that it was damnably false." This evidence, I afterwards learnt, was communicated to him without mentioning the name of the witness—evidently for the purpose of extracting some angry expression; I cannot better elucidate the matter than by quoting my letter to Major Shaw, from whom I requested an explanation on the subject.

LETTER, No. I.

Jan. 26th, 1832.

Sir,

I have this moment received your note of the 24th, which, although perfectly satisfactory as to the honourable assurance you give of your having no intention to insult me, leads me however to infer, that some incorrect statement of my evidence has been made, and hence induced you to support that I have *improperly* made use of your name. The following is a copy of my evidence on the subject: "As Colonel Hodges left "the room I entered, and found the Admiral in the presence of "Captain Rose, in conversation with Major Shaw, remonstrating "with him on the imprudence of his having left his regiment "when ordered on duty; and in the course of the conversation, "Captain Rose interfered, and exclaimed in very loud and disre- "spectful terms, at the same time turning round on his heel and "snapping his fingers, 'Who would serve with such a man as "'Sir John Milley Doyle? Shaw is right, and I be damned if "'I wouldn't do so too.' However, immediately after Major "Shaw said to the Admiral, "'In a military point of view I con- "'fess I am in error.'"—Now it is clear the object of my evidence only went to prove the disrespect from Captain Rose towards Admiral Sartorius, in thus, by manner and matter, endeavouring to contravene the opinions of the latter: and my mention of *your*

name in the first part, was not only natural, but very material to the evidence; and in the second part, viz. the confession of your error, equally important, inasmuch as it went to prove the futility of Captain Rose's unprovoked treatment of the Admiral's opinion; and at the same time which confession I conceive, in the estimation of a just and discerning public, is rather calculated to call forth eulogy than contempt, and cannot in any way be interpreted into an *improper use* of *your name*. If under these circumstances, and after this explanation, you should labour under the same impressions, I really, Sir, cannot help it; and I can only say, in your own language, that I never flinch from what I have coolly asserted; and that the consideration or importance of *any* man's name on earth shall never withold me from the statement of facts, which my judgment or my conscience may deem essential for the occasion; if by so doing I am unfortunate enough to excite the angry feelings of any person, I am perfectly ready, at all times, to meet it in such a way as would be consistent with my honour, although no person would more deeply deplore such an occurrence than myself, particularly as I never, to my recollection, *willingly* offended the feelings, or *wilfully* injured the character of any man.

I have the honour to remain,
Sir,
Your obedient servant,
G. Boid

I can only add that the evidence herein alluded to, as well as that previously mentioned, I was most especially called on to give by the Admiral, who knew I was present on both occasions, and must unavoidably have heard all that passed; and although I had much more in my power, I strictly limited myself thus far; neither before nor after the court-martial, had I any conversation with Admiral Sartorius, nor were any comments made by either of us, concerning the testimony I gave. Hearing, however, in

January from my friends on shore, that impressions unfavorable to me were circulating on the subject in Oporto, I immediately, and before any personal interview, resolved to obtain the Admiral's written opinion on the subject. I consequently dispatched the following note :

No. II.

January 26th 1833.

My dear Admiral,

Finding impressions prejudicial to my character are being made in Oporto, with respect to that portion of my evidence in which Major Shaw's name is brought forward, you will do me a great kindness by expressing your *unbiassed* opinion of the evidence I gave on that occasion.

Believe me, my dear Admiral,
Yours very truly,
G. Boid.

No. III.

Oporto Bar, January 26th 1833.

ANSWER OF ADMIRAL SARTORIUS.

My dear Boid,

I am most ready to bear testimony to the upright and impartial manner in which you gave your evidence on the trial of Captain Rose in Vigo Roads. With respect to that portion of it, which has been so unwarrantably commented on, I am willing to make oath, if necessary, that the entire matter of that evidence is strictly correct and true,—except that, to the best of my knowledge and recollection, Major Shaw had shortly left the room when the conversation and offensive language, and manner actually took place.

Believe me, my dear Boid,
Yours truly and faithfully,
G. R. Sartorius.

On mature reflexion, I felt convinced this exception was just; but that circumstance could not diminish the truth of the main and important facts on which I was giving evidence. However, I cordially congratulate Captain Peter on his success in detecting even this error of memory.

My calumniator's next attack is (in page 132), on the subject of promotion to the rank of Captain of a frigate, after the action of the 11th October: in commenting on this circumstance, he endeavours to lower me by stating that I was only a secretary, a *civilian*; but Captain Peter knew that I had a military appointment as well as himself; and that, independently of being the secretary of the fleet, I was Chef d'Etat Major to the Admiral, who, in the capacity of Vice Admiral and Major General of the Portuguese Navy, was entitled to four Aides-de-Camp—namely, one Captain, one Commander, and two Lieutenants.

Captain Mins asserts too, that "he (Capt. Boid) never, during the whole engagement, moved from the spot on which the first stood;" and that the Admiral "never made one* signal, or gave one order during the action, and that he never even once looked over the hammocks!" I will forbear expressing the natural feelings of disgust and indignation such fabrications merit: the assertions are too atrocious, too palpably false, to gain belief any where. The Admiral was at the gangway, closely watching the movements

* To prevent mistakes, or excuses, and obviate the necessity of instructions by signal, during the action, Admiral Sartorius on that occasion followed Nelson's example, by previously assembling the Captains, and specifically assigning to each his respective duties and stations; he then also explained his general plan and wishes—which, had they been properly attended to and executed, must indubitably have ensured the total capture of the enemy's fleet on that day.

of the enemy, and the progress of the action; and, directly contrary to Captain Mins' assertion, was (by second Captain Wilson) warned of his *exposed* position, with a request to change it. I was frequently by his side, occupied in reporting the positions and movements of our own vessels, which were principally astern, and on the weather quarter; and at every interval was encouraging the men to order and steadiness at their guns, for which latter I was thought by some too officious.

And now, what did the worthy Captain Mins do? He was active, *very active!* I was the first to remark it, during the action, to the Admiral; but on summing up (after reflexion, and in consequence of various rumours,) the actual and positive amount of his merits, they proved of rather an equivocal character. He was undoubtedly on the *qui vive* the whole time; but exclusively attending to, and ordering repairs of, damages; splicing the rigging, etc. in order to retain the ship effective. Query, for a [illegible] or for chase and close quarters? Certainly not the latter. The circumstance of his having put all his money in his pockets before the action commenced, will, I think, lead to some *éclaircissement* on the subject; and I distinctly affirm, that, to the best of my recollection, I neither heard nor saw him interfere with the *fighting* of the ship, either by urging enthusiasm and order; or giving encouragement to his officers and men; or by proposing or suggesting to the Admiral, as his second in command, any change in the plan of attack, by closing, boarding, or alteration of position. No! on the contrary,—at a moment when we found the enemy's line of battle ship on our lee quarter, and the Admiral suddenly exclaiming "He would wear round, and run along side her," he (Captain Mins) will surely not forget coming up to me and saying, (evidently *much perturbed in spirit,*) "Good God

what is the Admiral going to do, Boid? For God's sake, go and speak to him; it is impossible to continue the action! we haven't another round of cartridges filled; besides, look at the manner in which we are cut up!" Yet this is the man who, according to his own account, was so enthusiastically anxious to follow up the enemy, and by well thrashing him, "*in spite of the Admiral, enrol his name on the bright page of naval history.*"

In due deference to this gallant officer, and notwithstanding my ignorance (as he says,) of the ropes, I really feel that I had more to do with the fighting part of that action than he had: and this without assuming one particle of merit either. But since the gallant officer has thus striven to make me appear apathetic in the hour of action, I may surely be justified (even supposing it to be true) in manifesting his unreasonableness in throwing the first stone, and asking, if *he* would not have had a fairer chance of "*enrolling* his name in that bright page" had he acted differently, (and as every man of true courage would have done) on two very important occasions, when the success of Donna Maria's arms depended so much on the activity and prowess of her Captains, and when an end might have been put, at least, to the naval part of the contest.

Admiral Sartorius' instructions to Captain Mins, on the Miguelite fleet first coming out of the Tagus, were, "To keep *close* astern of him, and narrowly watch his motions, as he intended attacking the enemy; and, at all events, to try and cut off their frigate the first favourable moment that offered.* On the evening of the 3rd of August, 1832, the breeze freshening, the Admiral

* At this period it must be remembered, our force consisted only of the two frigates and a small schooner; and that of the enemy of a line of battle ship, a frigate, and five corvettes and brigs.

(according to Captain Mins' own account) made the signal to prepare for action. This circumstance, in addition to the previous instructions, would, I am confident, have sufficed with the generality of British officers to point out their line of duty, and induce them to be vigilant in watching, as well as active in following, the motions of their Admiral. Not so, however, in this instance; we (the flag ship) bore up, ran through the enemy's squadron between the frigate and line of battle ship, and most indubitably must have cut off the former if the Donna Maria had followed, and effectually lent her aid, by preventing the enemy's frigate from escaping us through her superior sailing, and getting into line again astern of the Don John. Captain Mins' reason, as explained to me as well as to the Admiral, for not *closely* following us on this occasion, was, that he lost sight of us, *as he supposed*, during the operation of reefing topsails. *Reefing topsails* without previous orders, or signal, at so important a moment! On a fine night!! In such a climate, and at a period of the year when no necessity could be apprehended for performing such an operation!!! Let the gallant hero reconcile this fact with his enthusiasm.

On the evening too of the 15th of August, when both fleets were becalmed for a short time in sight of Oporto, the Admiral determined immediately to take advantage of the circumstance, and make a dash at the enemy by aid of the steam boat, which he caused forthwith to be lashed alongside the flag ship; in the mean time ordering Captain Mins to send a hawser, that we might take his ship in tow. We were all elated at the prospect, and calculated with certainty on being in action at most in a quarter of an hour, with the full conviction of obtaining some signal success: but no hawser came! Judge of our anxiety

during this period; it was intense; for we every moment dreaded the coming of the breeze: and the reason of this delay, as assigned by Captain Mins, was, "That he was *waiting* for the Admiral to *send a boat* for the hawser!" An English inferior officer, wait for his superior and Commander-in-Chief to execute the orders given for him (the inferior) exclusively to obey! Oh! but Captain Mins excuses himself, by saying he had no boat. However, on a more peremptory order being given, and in a tone that evinced resolution, a boat was soon found, and the hawser sent: but alas! it was too late, and the Captain's object doubtless attained. Three quarters of an hour were thus vexatiously consumed in doing what, in the British service, would have been executed in less than five minutes. This circumstance alone frustrated the Admiral's well-devised and gallant plan, and disappointed all our hopes; for a breeze sprung up just as we got within half gun shot of the enemy, and they all, concentrating, bore away. Can the Portuguese government, or the world in general, on being made acquainted with these and innumerable other circumstances, be surprised that Admiral Sartorius should have failed in executing what they expected from him, and what British officers would deem feasible in our position during the expedition? or can Captain Peter justly appropriate to himself feelings of disappointment, that his name should not have been, whilst in that expedition, *enrolled on the bright page of naval history?* Let naval men decide!

Captain Mins next alludes (p. 134) to a sort of demi-official letter (as he calls it) from me, requesting him (according to his ingenious system of misconstruction) to *insinuate* to the officers of the gun-room, that the allowance of table-money was made to enable them to support the respectability of the service, and that it

was the Admiral's orders that it should be expended for that purpose alone. Captain Mins has, in fact, with his wonted low craftiness, substituted *insinuate* for *intimate*, which latter is in the original. The public will know how to appreciate this, and will not fail to observe that, throughout his work, he has perverted, misconstrued, and exaggerated both acts and expressions, to suit his turn for malignity and slander.

In pages 205 to 235, occupied by matter relative to Sir John Milley Doyle's mission to the squadron, Captain Mins, with the view of completing the degradation of Admiral Sartorius and myself in the estimation of Don Pedro and his government, puts a false construction on every thing the Admiral said and did on that occasion,—endeavouring to deduce all from treason, want of interest in the cause, and violation of faith to the sovereign to whom he had sworn allegiance; proceeding to intimate that I had concurred in, and encouraged all this. Now, the conduct of Admiral Sartorius at that period, and which I upheld, was (strange as it may appear to the world in its *prima facie* bearings, or by Captain Mins' showing) unavoidable, and imperatively called for: indeed, there was more genuine enthusiasm and fidelity towards the cause of Portugal manifested by it, than Captain Mins' little mind is capable of perceiving, his heart of feeling, or his judgment of executing, under circumstances so trying and critical. Such was the insubordination and inefficient condition of the seamen of the squadron at that time (which I can fearlessly state was traceable solely to Captain Mins's schemes and intrigues), that, had not decided measures been resolutely adopted to obtain the payment of the seamen's arrears, neither Admiral Sartorius nor any other human being, could have prevented the execution of the threat unanimously held forth by the

crews of the squadron—namely, that of starting away with the vessels by force, and taking them either to the Tagus, or any other place where they could obtain the amount of their wages. What would then have been the result? There would have been an immediate end put to the contest: the Miguelite fleet would have forthwith blockaded, and cut off all communication with, Oporto; and, in a very few days, have inevitably forced the constitutionalists not to capitulate, but unconditionally to surrender to a merciless enemy. On the contrary, by the Admiral's tact and influence with the men; by his resolute appeal to the government; and by our appearing to sympathize with the sailors; the end alone aimed at by our endeavours was obtained; the men were witheld from executing their threat, and ultimately paid, before the Admiral resigned the command. Thus was the fleet preserved for Admiral Napier's gallant superintendence—and the cause was saved. I feel satisfied that when the Portuguese shall be made fully acquainted with the truth of the case, and the trying position in which we were then placed; as also with the general tenour of Captain Mins's conduct in these affairs,—they will honourably acquit Admiral Sartorius of either want of energy, of fidelity to the cause, or of good feeling towards Don Pedro.

In pages 179 and 180, as well as in other places, Captain Peter endeavours to prove treacherous conduct on my part towards him as a *friend*. The gallant Captain never was sensible, that good offices and kindly feelings ought to be mutual in friendship; that such a sentiment requires sympathy. No! I never knew him concede an opinion; coincide with a wish that did not suit his immediate views; or manifest any disinterested desire to gratify, during our whole acquaintanceship. He exacted all! he

yielded nothing! Alas, a sterile soil cannot produce fruit! He does not know (because I never vauntingly told him so) that while I dignified him with the unmerited name of friend, on many occasions, (in private and in public,) I fought his battles, and espoused his cause: nor does he state that, at the period when I became silent on hearing allegations made against him, I had ceased to feel either regard or respect for him, in consequence not only of conduct on his part that I had witnessed, but also of numerous other facts forced on my attention. And I defy him to prove that, from the moment I began to evince such indifference, I either expressed to him, by word or manner, any feelings of friendship; or that, on the other hand, notwithstanding my altered opinions, I ever did or said anything that could annoy him previous to writing the following letter, which I did on hearing that, immediately he arrived in England, he had every where tried to blacken my character by his malignity and abuse:—from what real motive I am ignorant to this day. What he himself alleges on the subject shall afterwards appear in his own words.

No. IV.

CAPTAIN BOID'S LETTER TO CAPTAIN MINS.

Westbourne, Sept. 10th, 1833.

Sir,

Considerably to my astonishment, I was apprized by a friend, when in town in August, that you had complained violently of my treatment; and that in consequence you intended to insult me wherever you met me. Conscious how little I merited such usage, particularly at Captain Mins's hands, I was determined to put your threats to the test, by placing myself in

your way: and although at that time engaged in very important business elsewhere, I remained in town two or three days for that express purpose. After much vain research in the haunts I knew you were accustomed to frequent, you at length appeared at the Club late on the evening previous to my fixed departure from London. I was engaged at a rubber at whist at that moment; however, after remaining a short time in the room, you quitted without executing your resolves, or even noticing me in any way. I have also since heard, from various quarters, that subsequent to that occurrence you have determined on a less honourable and manly mode of shewing your malevolence, by sedulously endeavouring to disseminate unfavourable impressions respecting my character; and also that you, on some occasion, applied very offensive language in the Club to my name in conjunction with that of Admiral Sartorius. My first impulse was to exact from you the satisfactory redress which one gentleman would require from another; but on consulting a friend on the subject, I am come to the determination of considering you, on account both of your ignominious conduct towards me, and the stains on your own character, altogether out of the pale of gentlemanly privileges. If you possess, Sir, a remaining shadow of principle or truth, and will make your confessions in accordance with your conscience, you are well aware you can do no other than admit the base ingratitude, injustice, and total want of principle and feeling that has distinguished your proceedings against me on the late occasion. However, in the event of your memory, reason and reflexion failing you, I will take a brief sketch of our mutual conduct since the period of our first acquaintance, and hold up the picture for your own examination. I believe it was in the winter of 1824 we were first made known to each other, at the house of a mutual friend at Naples, where, as Lieutenant of the Revenge, you offered to take charge of some paintings for me to England. I accepted the proffered favour; and on meeting afterwards in Bath, I further cultivated your acquaintance, and endeavoured to evince my acknowledgment of your kindness, by all the little

friendly demonstrations, and warmth of urbanity, that one man can shew to another. My endeavours evidently so flattered and pleased you, that I determined to encourage the intimacy, in the hopes that it would meet an equal sympathy, and thus mature to the full vigour of a disinterested friendly alliance, sensible as I ever feel of the inestimable value of such a connexion, founded on generosity of heart and good feeling. I consequently took an active interest in all your concerns, the knowledge of which you confided to me; and on many occasions of your imprudence, offered you my conscientious advice, (one of the disagreeable offices of friendship,) particularly on one respecting the conduct of your family, which you so unceasingly, yet so injudiciously and indelicately condemned, and so bitterly complained of: and on the occurrence of an open rupture with your mother, when I was enabled by mediation to restore a good understanding between you; for all which you frequently acknowledged I was the only real friend you had. About the same period, I also gave you such a proof of the sincerity and solidity of *my* attachment, which no other person in the world could give than one warmly and devotedly interested in the welfare of another. I need not mention the circumstance; all I can say on the subject is, that according to my feelings it would require many trials of *real* injury done me, to cause the oblivion of such an act. In the summer of 1831 I introduced you to my friend, then Captain Sartorius, who shortly after, in consequence of *your own* representations and the favourable reports I had made of you, engaged your services as second in command, in the expedition at that time planning against the usurper Don Miguel. You readily entered into the spirit of it, repeatedly calculating on all the advantages, honorary as well as pecuniary, that must accrue in case of success. Soon after, *I* too entered the lists in the cause of freedom; and Sartorius, you and myself, went warmly hand in hand in all our associations, whether on that subject or in private life, until on account of some little change which he thought it expedient to make in the commands, and which did not meet your approval, you altered your tone

from praise to blame, and from that period commenced a tirade of abuse and inimical feeling, which has continued augmenting to the present day, in proportion to the disappointment you have experienced in your ambitious machinations.

It was not, however, in an open manly way you expressed your displeasure at his plans; no! it was always behind his back; and although you knew he was my most intimate and attached friend, you, without the slightest regard to such a circumstance, most unfeelingly and most indelicately made me the receptacle of your cruel and malevolent abuse of him. What, Sir, was my conduct on these occasions? Did I put him on his guard? Did I even breathe a hint to him of your bad feeling, which I well knew must inevitably be the cause of the immediate rejection of your services? No! but I remonstrated with you, as a devoted friend, though in vain. I reasoned with you, and fruitlessly tried to impress on you the false interpretation you had given of his conduct. How did I act when your proceedings became still more violent and dangerous to the service, during our cruize off Madsira; when you took every opportunity of sowing the seeds of disaffection both in the minds of the men as well as the officers, by abusing, in the grossest terms, the admiral and all that he did, in such vociferous language to me, whenever we were walking the deck together, that it was evidently with no other view than to render it a means of making such sentiments public, and thus to produce the effects you so ardently desired? And when, on the occasion of our pursuit of the Miguelite corvette which we lost, you covertly impressed the crew that the Admiral was the cause of their losing a rich prize?—did I then give you any proof of bad feeling? Did I (as I confess I ought to have done, not only on account of your atrocious attempts against his character, but also on account of the dire effects your conduct was evidently producing) did I warn my real friend of the hidden enemy that was lurking about him, in the disguise of a friend and companion? No, Sir! in the hopes of working a remedy I put off the evil day; I reproached you: I endeavoured to make you sensible of your

imprudence: I remonstrated with you, and really almost entreated you on my knees, for your own sake, for the sake of the service, and out of common respect to my feelings as his friend, to discontinue a system that would prove so destructive to the order, well-being, and discipline of any service; and which, in our own navy, would bring down immediate destruction on your head. You avowed the fact, accompanied, however, with the futile and unmanly excuse, "that you could not help it," that, "it was impossible to hide your feelings." During the attack of the enemy on our vessels in the Downs, on the 10th July, 1832, when you refused to execute a commission personally given you by Don Pedro, upon the plea that you would be exposed to a warm fire of the enemy's musquetry; you are probably not aware that the Emperor demanded from the Admiral a reason for your neglect of his orders on that day; to which the Admiral could only reply by stating verbatim the reasons as given to him by yourself: upon which the Emperor strongly animadverted, saying, "If an aide de camp of mine had behaved so cowardly, and refused, upon such a plea, to cross the field of battle with important orders, I will only ask, what I should have said and done?" Did I (as any person inimically disposed towards you would have done) ever comment on that circumstance to a second person? No, Sir, I will bid defiance to any man to prove it has been repeated until the present moment. When, in Vigo Bay, Captain Massie refused an appointment to your ship, on the plea that he could not serve under a man who had been turned out of a vessel (in which you were his shipmate) for cowardice; did I repeat it, or even listen to it with an air of credit, when reflected on by the officers of the squadron? No! I discountenanced it until a similar circumstance occurred on board the Briton, where, on the same plea, one of the lieutenants refused to meet you at Captain Markland's dinner table. Nor did I then aid in circulating the report, although having thus the fact forced upon me. Also when the commissary general, on his return from England, publicly declared that you had committed a fraud on the agents for the expedition, to the

amount of £300; and that you could never again show your face at the J. U. S. Club; did I assist in giving publicity, or a colouring of truth to it? No, Sir! And when you clandestinely left the fleet in Vigo Bay, added to many other circumstances which induced me to alter my feeling as well as opinions of you, I did not even then act the part of an enemy. On the contrary, I entreated the Admiral to give up your effects, which he had judged it right to detain, observing, that I thought you had sufficiently degraded yourself without further exposure from him; and he only refused doing so because he had communicated the affair to the minister of marine in a public letter, and must necessarily await his (the minister's) decision on the subject. At that period also, in transmitting you a letter I had received from England, I openly told you I had not approved of your conduct in the squadron for some time past, and still less so recently: but that I would not be your enemy: in confirmation of which I can only assure you that in reply to many queries about you from home in Bath and Essex, where your friends also were resident, I enjoined the most perfect silence as to reports connected with your name, and entreated them to profess a thorough ignorance of any thing they might hear unfavourable to your character. Was all this the conduct of an enemy? of one evily disposed towards you? But, if necessary, I could adduce further proofs of my staunch support in your favour in private society, when your character has been questioned. And now let us observe how you have requited the person who has thus upheld you; the man you so frequently confessed, to the officers in the squadron, was the only real friend you had in the world. Why, the first circumstance I hear is whilst in Oporto of your basely calumniating me, and, to do so, lending yourself to the purposes of Don Pedro's then advisers, who found it necessary, *pro tempore*, to make a stalking-horse of some one; I was that distinguished individual, and you the honourable organ they considered the most worthy of being employed to circulate the report, "that Admiral Sartorius was an honourable man, but that Captain Boid's advice had been the cause of all his opposition to

the government." As I was no court butterfly, nor a place-hunter, I really felt no other disappointment or indignant impulse, than to smile in contempt of such disgusting littleness. I must confess, at first, I could not credit it, nor, indeed, until amply assured by a combination of proof. And even after that, did I attempt to revenge myself by recrimination, which you well knew I could have done, both with greater truth and justice? No, Sir: nor did I at that time, or any other period down to the present, repeat a communication that was at that time made to the Admiral, namely, that you had been expelled the college for theft. All these facts would have been *nuts* to those who condescend to the degrading practice of doing a private injury to revenge offence, and, indeed, to any one who, as in my case, had received such unmerited persecution. But, Sir, the only extent to which I ever proceeded in giving my opinion of you was, that "I was sorry to say I thought you had conducted yourself very badly." Had you been my brother I could not, would not, have said less. I, therefore, have been somewhat puzzled to discover the cause of all your bitter enmity, further than my being a friend of Admiral Sartorius. Had you, Sir, been more fortunately blessed with a better heart, had you possessed one hundredth portion of that man's generosity of heart, or one glimmering spark of his moral and religious principles,—you would, on the first feeling of mistrust, the first suspicion of me, in an open manly manner have communicated your sentiments, and, if justly grounded, reasoned and remonstrated with me, as I did with you. I think I merited such a preliminary step, at least from you. But quite the contrary: I have never directly or indirectly been apprised that I had given you cause for offence; and it is by accident alone I hear that, like the adder in the grass, you are crawling about and lying wait for every opportunity to poison my character; even spreading your calumny in the bosom of those private families where you knew me to be most intimate. Is this the conduct of an officer? Is it gentlemanly, respectable, or christian-like? Is it such as a person of any honour or feeling could be

expected to bring himself to observe towards his *best and only friend?* I will leave your conscience to make the reply, and to contemplate the picture I have thus placed before you. Had you permitted yourself to be guided by the advice I was incessantly endeavouring, during the whole expedition, to influence you by, you cannot, in candour, but confess that the results would have proved more beneficial to the welfare of the service in which we were engaged, as well as to your own individual interests, happiness and character. But the opportunity is gone by; you have long neglected the warning of the old proverb, "*Carpe diem;*" and you will have to blame yourself alone for the evil consequences that will necessarily arise, and in which I only hope you will be rendered sensible of the diabolical injustice with which you have treated the man who was willing to have saved you. However, I must beg to intimate that if you cannot immediately assure me that in your calumnies you have not attempted to circulate any reports that may tend to wound my reputation as an officer or gentleman, I will lose no time in exhibiting to the public the above picture, fraught with other explanatory matter which I shall deem necessary for the purpose of guarding society against the wicked machinations of such a man; not that I fear any man's efforts to injure my character, more than *pro tempore*, still less from Captain Mins's vile attempts. You may daub the surface with a false fictitious covering, but a light finger will always be able to remove the filth and expose the purity of the colours beneath. In conclusion, I must beg to apprise you that your exertions of late against me, amongst some of my intimate friends, have produced effects quite the converse of what you doubtless anticipated, since it has encreased their kindness and attentions to me, and completely lowered you in their estimation.

I remain, Sir,
Yours, etc.,
E. Boid.

This letter produced " twinges of former friendship," and an invitation to explain !

No. V.

J.U.S. Club, September 26th 1833.

Sir,

I have received your letter of the 10th this moment, and am much staggered at its contents—for finding declarations there so opposite to informations received and impressions made, of your conduct to me and others—I cannot but feel some twinges of that friendship which I *thought* existed between us, but which I *knew* to exist on my own part. I told Mr. Brooks, when he stated to me your intention of shaking hands with me, to advise you not, for if you did I should insult you—which is *somewhat* different to your statement; and I was as much surprised, as you could have been, when we were in the same room together. I honestly tell you, did I not feel some remembrances of the friendship that did exist between us, I should not have *condescended* to have replied to you; but your declarations of your conduct are so strange, and so *totally different* to what it has been stated to me, that I cannot help exclaiming, is it possible I have been deceived? If I have, not more so than you have been; and I declare to God, I knew NOTHING of your leaving the squadron, until after you left—and then by accident, when I understood it was on duty; so little had I to do with it; and as for stating " Sartorius was an honest fellow badly advised"—I had too much reason after my arrival at Oporto to think *otherwise* — ever to make such a statement. However, if you can acquit yourself, *as I can*, of all injurious reports;—if you can declare, you behaved *behind my back* to me, as *I can declare* I did to you, then I invite you to an explanation; and, if satisfactory, as I told Mr. Brooks, I'll beg your pardon publicly, or in *any way you* like; but if you cannot do so, never see me; but understand me clearly, I defy you and

all my enemies to substantiate any *one single* charge against my character, as a *gentleman* or an *officer* during the time I was under Sartorius. And as to those circumstances that occurred to me at school or as a midshipman, I give you full permission to make them public, in any and every way you may choose. I shall take no more trouble with your letter and its contents—except saying, I will never hold my tongue—but will, *whenever* and *wherever* I choose, speak the truth; and I will act as I have *always* done—CONSCIENTIOUSLY, UPRIGHTLY, GENTLEMANLY, and FEARLESSLY; and which I have done since I was eleven years old, which is since my conduct at school as a child, which my enemies wish to brand me with as a man. I shall conclude by inviting you to an explanation, if you can stand it; or, if not, in defying you and all my enemies.

P. MINS.

What further explanation could I enter into than is contained in my letter?—which it may be said is almost rendered too prolix by the enumeration of every case in point: which, in very few words, I told him, leaving it to him to act accordingly. The gallant hero then, seeing I was not disposed to descend to any degrading compromise or means of adjustment, suppressed his "amicable twinges," and mounts into the heroics; and again assuming a tone of irascibility and disappointment, enumerates, in the following epistle, *proofs* of my treachery to him.

September 30th 1833.

Sir,

A severe cold keeps me in my home, and will prevent my going out for some days; but as I have left directions at the Club, your letter of yesterday has been forwarded me. I have little to say—your first letter on *your own* account seems to corro-

borate all I had heard—all the infamous letters of Sartorius to the minister of marine and others were in *your* hand writing; *you* came from Vigo with Captain Blackiston, about four hours after I left the Bayonna Islands, in the Lord of the Isles, to make a prisoner of me; and so many other things *you did*, and *you left undone*, that I repeat, unexplained, will leave me in the same belief. I have therefore only to add, I shall not hold my tongue; and I put all my enemies to defiance.

I am,

P. MINS.

If my first letter corroborated all he *had heard*, why invite me to *explain !* or how could it call forth such *twinges ! !* As to his accusation that I accompanied Captain Blackiston to the Bayonna Roads to make a prisoner of him, it is a diabolical falsehood ! That officer was, together with myself, despatched by the Admiral to the Lord of the Isles steamer, for the sole purpose of adjusting matters between the master of that vessel and the corps of French volunteers he was conveying to Oporto, and who, (imprudently headed by their officer) had been in a most unruly state, in consequence of alleged short allowance of provisions. On our arrival at Bayonna roads, however, we found the steamer had sailed, with Captain Mins as one of her passengers. It was not, however, known to our party that Captain Mins was there, until the fact was communicated to us by Captain Goblet, on reaching his ship, the Don Pedro.

With respect to the Admiral's letters concerning him to the minister of marine, being in my hand writing, assuredly they were so, as were all other dispatches to that functionary. But how can this criminate me ? Captain Mins knows I could not refuse transmitting those documents, on his account, even had I

been most warmly allied to him ; and he also knows that, at the period* they were written, it was impossible I could entertain any respect for him, to say nothing of friendship ; therefore, could not be expected to act the part of a friend by intimating the proceedings against him. No, Captain Peter is aware that these, like all his other attempts to criminate me, are about as cogent as are the expressions in his letter, touching the *many things I did !* and *what I left undone !*

The transaction he mentions respecting Mr. Brooks, and which he dilates on with such evident satisfaction in pages 270 and 271, is described by that party to be as follows, affording another proof of the Captain's veracity, and of the reliance that may be placed on his *Historical Narrative*, and on the account of himself, as second in command, which he has submitted for decision at the bar of public opinion.

Mr. Brooks, who had not as yet heard anything from me concerning Captain Mins, and was ignorant of all that had passed, says he could not consequently have used my name in the manner

* At this time, independent of my having totally disowned Captain Mins as a friend, in consequence of his private conduct, his public character was so tainted that no officer was justified in countenancing him. Could I or any other person think otherwise than basely of an officer who, under his peculiar circumstances, *clandestinely* left the fleet to evade the Admiral, who had previously put him under arrest ? That he did so, the master of that steam-boat, the City of Edinburgh, (in which he was stowed away for the purpose,) bore testimony, by reproachingly asking, at the time he *discovered* him, how he, a commander in the British Navy, could hide away like a miscreant, and evade honestly and honorably meeting the accusations brought against him !! A pretty humiliating situation this for an aspirant to a place in the bright page of naval history !

stated by Captain Mins: but on hearing him abuse Admiral Sartorius and myself in a most vulgar, indelicate, indeed disgusting way, wished in the goodness of his heart to act as pacificator, and observed: "that there must be some misunderstanding on his (Captain Mins's) part; as he was sure *I* was friendly disposed towards him, and would be ready to prove it and set all to rights when we met." Now, the gallant hero must, even with his scantiness of perception, have plainly seen that this was not the language of a *commissioned* mediator, but that of one acting the part of peace-maker without authority, and by anticipation: however, it certainly furnished a fine opportunity, which with fiendlike malice he seizes on and appropriates in his own way.

I will next refer to p. 262, where he says: "Nobody can be surprised that he, (Captain Mins) expressed his displeasure when he found me capable of writing such a letter as I did to Mr. Dalrymple." The latter gentleman is my old friend, for whose son-in-law, Mr. Dawson, I procured an appointment as midshipman on board Captain Mins's ship. And what is the letter I wrote? Having, in a previous one, communicated poor Dawson's death in the action of the 11th of October, I now explained, as well as I could, the state of his affairs, remitting a bill of exchange for the amount of his pay, which the Commissary General (knowing he was a *protégé* of mine, and his father my intimate friend) very naturally placed in my hands; at the same time, I mentioned the prize money I thought would be coming to him in addition to the portion of the dollars from the Don John Magnanimo which Captain Mins held: but that I stated, as Captain Mins says, £25 to be that portion, is a palpable falsity; and in reference to this subject, I subjoin a communication received since these remarks were first penned, from Mr. Dalrymple, on which the reader will exercise his own judgment.

Lorient, Morbihan, France.
July 12, 1834.

My dear Captain Boid,

In consequence of a work I have received within these few days, being a "Narrative of the Naval Part of the Expedition to Portugal," by Captain Mins, and sent me as a present, and forwarded by Major Payne, anything connected with the expedition being a subject that interests me so much, (my dear son-in-law having fallen in the cause of Donna Maria) induced me to read the work immediately. Great was my surprise to find my name, as well as dear Wm. Dawson's, made mention of in pages 261 and 262; in consequence, I have written, by this day's post, to Captain Mins, and, not knowing his address, have sent my letter to him under cover to Major Payne, to forward immediately. I have, my dear friend, a thousand apologies to offer you for the unintentional and unfortunate mistake I have made in putting £ for pounds instead of the word dollars: nor should I have ever been conscious of the mistake had I not received Captain Mins' work; not having destroyed our correspondence, I compared it with his work, when, to my utmost grief, I perceived the error to have been occasioned by me; at the same time, I must candidly say, that I could not, for a moment, imagine that my private family correspondence with Captain Mins, relative to dear Wm. Dawson's death, would have been brought before the public. I now forward you a copy of my letter to Captain Mins of this date. May I entreat of you to write me a line to acknowledge the receipt of this? Being anxious that both letters may leave this by to-day's post, excuse my writing more.

Believe, me dear Sir,

Yours very truly,

GEORGE WEMYSS DALRYMPLE.

To Captain E. Boid,
Late of Her M. F. M's Navy.

(COPY OF LETTER TO CAPTAIN MINS.)

Lorient, Morbihan, France.
12th July 1834.

My dear Sir,

Having been in the country for a short time, on my return, a few days ago, I found a letter from Major Payne, forwarding me your present of your work "Narrative of the Naval Part of the Expedition to Portugal." Having read the work, I was much surprised to find, in pages 261 and 262, my name mentioned relative to our private correspondence which took place in consequence of my dear son-in-law, William Dawson, having been killed on board Her M. F. M. frigate, the Donna Maria, in the engagement of October 11, 1832. Fortunately I had not destroyed Captain Boid's letter to me of 29th December 1832, nor copy of my letter to you of 4th August 1833. I embrace the earliest opportunity to write to you to say, I find, by my letter to you of 4th August 1833, that I sent you the following extract from Captain Boid's letter of 29th December, 1832, dated Vigo Bay.

(COPY OF EXTRACT.)

"I have this day, however, taken advantage of the Commissary General being on board, to procure his balance, of which I now remit you by my first of exchange. His share of the dollars, found in the Don John Magnanimo, Captain Mins I find has already received, viz. £25, and will, consequently, forward to you with his clothes."

Captain Boid's letter, of above date, on re-examination I find says, that, "Captain Mins I find has already received 25 dollars, and will consequently forward to you with his clothes."

You will greatly oblige me by *correcting immediately on the receipt of this, in as public a manner as possible, the mistake* which, after reading your work, I perceived I so unfortunately had made by putting an £ for pounds English, instead of the word dollars after the 25. I regret most sincerely I do not know Captain Boid's address, to write to him immediately to apologize to him

so unintentional and unpleasant a mistake; however, the ment I can obtain his address, I shall write to him, Captain In page 261 I find these words, speaking of Capta id. "On the 29th December, 1832, he wrote from Vigo Bay, out communicating with me on the subject, to Mr. Dalrymple, father-in-law of a gallant young mishipman, (Dawson,) who been killed in our last action, telling him that I had received his son's share of dollars, found in the Don John Magnanimo, viz £25."

I trust that I have clearly proved to you that Captain Boid was correct in saying 25 dollars, and that it was my mistake in putting pounds? I do not conceive the letter addressed to me of above date, was written with any unfriendly feelings towards you. Having said so much, I think it but just towards all parties to give my reason for thinking so. Captain Boid, when living at Stoke, near Windsor, with his brother, the late Rev. Mr. Bold, had been, for very many years, the intimate friend of my relations, General George Roberts, and General Samuel Dalrymple, as well as of myself, all then inhabiting Wexham Lodge near Windsor. On my reaching Belle Isle from Nantes, where I arrived with the Emperor and his suite, on board the Superb steam vessel, on 2nd February, 1832, I found my son-in-law waiting for me, and the next day he and I went on board the Rainha da Portugal, to pay a visit to Admiral Sartorius, to try and obtain a commission for my son-in-law: to our mutual surprise, Captain Boid and I met: when I succeeded not in getting him a commission, but only to let him form a part in the expedition as volunteer midshipman—all expenses at my charge, and Dawson not to receive any pay.

I entreated Captain Boid as a mark of friendship, to take W. Dawson under his care, and to act towards him as he knew I would do myself. This request was made by me in consequence of Dawson's youth, and his first entry into the world; he just having left school; and, at the same time, requested Captain B. to supply him with money, or anything else that Dawson might

require, and as he might think prudent. General Dalrymple after that period was kind enough to write to Captain Boid in some terms, so that if Captain Boid interfered in any way with *affairs of Dawson*, it was certainly not with an *unfriendly feeling towards you*, but at the *particular request*, as I have said before, of *General Dalrymple and myself*.

With respect to the prize money that is due, whatever sum it may be, I shall feel obliged, on the receipt of this, if you will have it paid into the foreign office of the banking-house of Messrs. Coutts and Co. London, and placed to my account; requesting them to write to Messrs Besne and Hebert of Lorient, Morbihan, France, that they hold the same at my immediate disposal. I trust this letter will prove satisfactory to all parties. Not knowing your address, I shall take the liberty of putting this under cover to Major Payne, requesting of him to forward it to you.

I remain, dear Sir,

Yours very truly,

GEORGE WEMYSS DALRYMPLE.

To Captain P. Mins.

Captain Mins, in the bitterness and malignity of his comments on my conduct, makes great efforts to inflict on my reputation the same disgraceful stains attaching to his own. In his tirade of slang, he *insinuates* (now I can appropriate the term,) cowardice and inconsistency, because I did not deal with him as with a gentleman, and place him on the same footing as myself. He would also make it appear that I, like him, ran away from the fleet, and avoided returning to it in the hour of danger. Finally, he tries to hold me up to the execration of the Portuguese government, by asserting that I have calumniated the Marquis Funchal, Chevalier de Lima, and Messrs. Carbonell and Mendizabel, ludicrously associating himself with them by boasting (p. 277,) of the

for nor he feels in *sharing* with those illustrious individuals, the monopoly of Admiral Sartorius and myself.

Boldly I will answer these imputations, and conclude by contrasting Bolton's own conduct with mine; at the same time defying him, or with him any other person, to prove that I ever, on any occasion, exhibited the slightest symptoms of fear, or want of firmness in the hour of danger.

In the first place, instead of running away, I was dispatched by Admiral Sartorius 'on a special mission' to the Portuguese authorities in London, to explain personally the critical condition of the squadron, and represent, for its preservation, the vital necessity of immediately raising money by some means or other for the payment of the men. I was then sent over to France, with a view of obtaining the release of, and of fitting out, the Don John Magnanimo. In this mission, however, notwithstanding I offered to defray part of the expense out of my own pocket, I failed, and on my return to England did not leave a stone unturned to obtain a passage to join Admiral Napier; but so prejudiced had the Portuguese become against me, for supposed culpabilities and want of fidelity to the cause, that every obstacle was interposed, and it was at length intimated that there were officers enough out, and my services were not required, notwithstanding which, I was of course entitled to my pay. Hence I felt convinced of my position, and lost no time in officially reporting the same to Admiral Napier, who had just obtained his glorious victory.

As to my abuse of the Portuguese authorities, it was not, as Captain Mins adroitly states, the Ambassador and Chargé d'Affaires, but the Agent Mr. Vanzeller, who (in consequence I presume of my fancied delinquency) by throwing the principal

impediments in the way of my proceeding to the fleet, certainly and naturally excited my strong chagrin.

With respect to Captain Mins's imputation of my want of courage, in not calling him out or breaking his bones, how should I have degraded myself by the latter! and, by the former, how much greater want of courage should I have evinced, had I been weak enough to do it—knowing it would be a vain demonstration of pugnacity; and that, as on former occasions, he would have excused himself on the plea *of being an only son*, or on the score of *religious scruples*. I should indeed, then, have merited the accusation.

But the gallant Captain tells us he came home to England purposely to call out Admiral Sartorius. Admirable plea to hide his own infamy! Oh no! he did not alarm himself on that head; he was fully convinced the Admiral would not condescend to meet him, until he had purified his character from its stains. He left his chief alarms at Oporto, which place was surrounded by the hazards and *désagrémens* of close siege; and what is more, where he had to answer to the government grave charges concerning pecuniary matters. And what course does he pursue? Why—not having given sufficiently satisfactory explanations to that government—he, despite their injunctions to the contrary, quits the city, as he left the fleet, *by stealth*, which act called forth a document from the administration,* declaring him a *deserter* and a *defaulter*, to their Chargé d'affaires in London. This functionary endeavoured to induce Captain Mins to return; not only by stating that he could not comply with the Captain's

* This same administration had protected him against the pretended injustice of Admiral Sartorius; but at length opened their eyes and discerned the mask he wore.

application for leave of absence, but by causing a passage to be offered him to return to Oporto, which *he refused.* How can our hero reconcile all these circumstances with his *soi-disant* innocence, bravery, and enthusiasm in favour of Don Pedro and the Portuguese? Instead of coming away, as he says, for the purpose of calling out Admiral Sartorius, why did he not suppress his vengeful intentions; remain where he was; and at a moment so critical both to his own character and the constitutional cause, endeavour to prove the injustice of his persecutors, (as he calls them,) to clear up the imputations against himself, and by his energies and services prove the genuineness of that zeal which he every where takes occasion to profess throughout his work—bedaubing the whole with the most hypocritical praise of Don Pedro and his government, with the palpable object of thus evading the indignation and blame he justly merits at their hands.

But granting the imperative necessity of his coming home to vindicate his fair character;—how comes it he has allowed nine months to pass away without proceeding *again* to Portugal, for the purpose of satisfactorily replying to a document so destructive to honour, reputation, and character, in every way! Let Captain Peter Mins reconcile all this to his conscience, if he can. The most charitable allowance I can make for him is, that his intellects are seriously affected—perhaps by the disappointment he has experienced in not attaining an honourable place in the bright page of naval history; or perhaps on the principle of the ancient adage, "*Quod Deus vult perdere, prius dementat.*"

LONDON:
SCHULZE AND CO., 13, POLAND STREET.

00083804

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 02 January, 2016